

# The Early History of Missaukee County: A Reader

Second Edition, September 2016

By Steven Koster

Koster Media, Tinley Park, Illinois steven@koster.com © 2016 Steven Koster

#### **Preface**

This collection describes the pre-history and early years of Missaukee County, Michigan, roughly up to the year 1900. The first entries summarize the broad outline of history, and the rest are news articles, first-hand memoirs, and family stories that provide detail and personal flavor. Taken together, they provide a multi-faceted journey through Missaukee's pioneering decades.

One goal of this project is to provide more accurate and complete historical documentation, a second is to collect some little-known resources for public use, and a third is to re-publish early resources as electronic documents so their stories will be cataloged and found online by a wider audience for many years to come.

This Second Edition includes new research, particularly on the earliest people to dwell in Missaukee, from Native Americans, to surveying teams, to the first documented pioneers. It also now includes several additional and expanded memoirs. John Brink shares some colorful stories from "the first white man to set foot in Missaukee." John Vogel's diary, usually published in a truncated version, is now expanded to include his later life. Several additional first-hand memoirs of pioneers are added, including WL Coffinberry, Dan Reeder, Leonard Herweyer, Marion Richardson, and James Cavanaugh. A memoir of a typical Dutch immigrant family has been added.

George Stout now contributes two histories. The first is his 1917 history, roughly covering the years 1871-1917, which provides the most original summary of those decades, along with annotations from historian Fred Hirzel. Later in the collection is Stout's even earlier review of the year 1891, which is really Stout's first attempt at summarizing the flavor of Missaukee's pioneer years. Stout used his 1891 work as a source for his later and more expansive 1917 History. Finally, a bibliography of known sources on Missaukee history has been added, with some indication of their value, origins, and relationship to one another, to provide quick access to the most primary sources on key topics.

Thanks to the historians, librarians, families, and fans of Missaukee that have preserved these histories. Thanks to the Missaukee Historical Society for their online archive, the Missaukee County Library for their historical collection, and Calvin College for their Heritage Hall.

I dedicate this collection to my parents, Ed Koster and Joyce Brinks Koster, both born in Aetna Township. The First edition was on the occasion of my father's 75<sup>th</sup> Birthday, and this Second is on the occasion of my mother's 75<sup>th</sup>. It's also in memory of my big brother, Tim Koster, fisherman and fisher of men. I myself have never lived in Missaukee, but it's always felt like home.

-Steven Koster, Tinley Park, Illinois, 23 September 2016

# **Contents**

EARLIEST SETTLERS OF MISSAUKEE COUNTY, 1200-1870	
THE VERY EARLIEST RESIDENTS: MOUND BUILDERS (1200-1450)	5
Before Europeans: Native Algonquin and Iroquois (1450-1830)	
US Surveyors: 1830-1860	11
SPECULATORS AND LUMBERMEN (1855-1870)	14
Homesteaders and Pioneers (1867-1900)	16
So Who Was First?	20
From Frontier to Naming a County	21
THE HISTORY OF MISSAUKEE COUNTY, 1871-1917 (1917)	23
[1870s: Creating a County]	23
[1880s]	31
[1890s]	44
[1900s]	50
[Hirzel's Closing Remarks]	53
PRE-HISTORIC MOUNDS (1883)	55
[An Expedition to Missaukee]	55
DIGGING INTO THE PAST	
ANOTHER TAKEN IN	
[Missaukee from Wilderness to City]	
THE STORY OF A YEAR IN MISSAUKEE COUNTY (1891)	57
INTRODUCTORY	57
1891: A CHRONOLOGICAL REVIEW OF THE EVENTS OF THE YEAR IN MISSAUKEE COUNTY	58
Marriages	62
Our County as It Is	64
Our Villages	64
Churches and Pastors	67
RETROSPECTIVE: A BRIEF HISTORY OF MISSAUKEE	73
JOHN BRINK, GOVERNMENT SURVEYOR (1891)	77
JOHN BRINK, SURVEYOR	77
CHICAGO AND GALENA IN 1831	77
Lake Geneva and Its Name	78
MICHIGAN AND INDIANS	80
DUTCH SETTLEMENT NORTH OF MUSKEGON 1867-1897 (C1897)	84
History	84
Fremont	84
Vogel Center	85
New Era	87
LUCAS	87
ATWOOD	88

DANIEL REEDER MEMOIRS (1897)	89
[REEDER FAMILY BACKGROUND]	89
[EXPLORING MISSAUKEE]	89
FILING CLAIMS	90
Agnes Reeder's Memories	90
MEMOIR OF JOHN VOGEL, IMMIGRANT AND PIONEER (1906)	91
BACKGROUND OF THE DIARY	91
Foreword from <i>Michigan History</i> Magazine	92
MEMOIRS OF JOHN VOGEL	93
Addendum: Obituary of Jan Vogel (1907)	107
FIRSTS OF MISSAUKEE COUNTY (1902)	109
[ROUGH SKETCH OF EARLIEST SETTLERS]	109
[A HISTORY, LIKELY FROM STOUT'S STORY OF THE YEAR]	110
PIONEER DAYS IN CLAM UNION TOWNSHIP (1935)	114
[CHAPTER ONE: IMMIGRATION]	114
[CHAPTER ONE: PIONEERING MISSAUKEE]	115
CHAPTER TWO: [PIONEER LIFE]	117
Chapter Three: [Pioneer Privations]	119
CHAPTER FOUR: [FROM PIONEERS TO COUNTY]	120
NORTHERN MISSAUKEE'S FIRST WHITE SETTLERS (C1936)	122
Early Homestead Claims	122
HISTORICAL SOCIETY LEARNS ABOUT SETTLERS (1982)	124
RUTGERT BRINKS FAMILY HISTORY (1934)	127
Introduction	127
Brinks Family History 1794-1934	128
RECORD OF DESCENDANTS	131
BIBLIOGRAPHY ON MISSAUKEE HISTORY	132
On Native American History (pre-1800)	132
On Early Surveyors (MID-1800s)	133
GENERAL MATERIAL ON MISSAUKEE AND MICHIGAN	133
SPECIFIC MATERIAL ON MISSAUKEE EARLY SETTLERS (LATE-1800s)	134

# Earliest Settlers of Missaukee County, 1200-1870

By Steven Koster, 2016

#### **Preface**

Who was in Missaukee first? This history attempts to summarize and document the earliest known events in area we now call Missaukee, from Native Americans, to Surveyors, to Homesteaders. Many retellings of Missaukee's first events are error-prone, recycling fuzzy family memories, sometimes decade after decade. Many capture the flavor of early life, but often have incomplete information and emphasize later myths and family influence. With the advent of the Internet, vast amounts of documents that were quite inaccessible to previous generations are now available to us, enabling detailed documentation.

# The Very Earliest Residents: Mound Builders (1200-1450)

A thousand years ago, Native American peoples dwelt in Michigan and all over the Great Lakes. We know them mostly through earthworks and artifacts they left behind, including a few significant ruins in Missaukee county.

There are at least two major Native American sites in Missaukee, one in Aetna, and one in Reeder, along with some scattered mounds. In the 1800s, scholars and treasure hunters alike dug into these mounds just to see what they could find. In 1925, an archeologist from the University of Michigan, Emerson Greenman, explored more scientifically the ancient earthworks in Aetna township, and a bit in Reeder. Another team came in the 1960s from Michigan State University and also looked at both sites. In the 21st century, Meghan Howey, another U of M archeologist, assessed the Aetna site extensively.

On top of a prominent hill in Aetna, they found two circular enclosures—rings of mounded embankments--about 4 meters wide surrounded by a ditch 2 meters wide. Each circle was about 200 feet in diameter,<sup>5</sup> but the eastern enclosure (designated as site 20MA12) is a bit larger at 53 meters than the western enclosure (20MA11) at 48 meters.<sup>6</sup> Soil was dug from the surrounding ditch and then piled to the inside edge, creating an embankment. They found no evidence here of logs being inserted

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> See Hinsdale, Wilbert B., *Archeological Atlas of Michigan*, University of Michigan Press, 1931.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> See Coffinberry's 1883 tale of digging in Missaukee for a great example, "Pre-Historic Mounds," Grand Rapids *Democrat*, 3 August 1883. Coffinberry also explored the Grand River valley mounds and reported on them in the science literature of his time.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> He makes an initial report in Greenman, Emerson F., "<u>Michigan Mounds, with Special Reference to Two in Missaukee County</u>," Papers of the Michigan Academy of Science, Arts, and Letters, vol. VII, 1927, p. 3. He elaborates further in his 1961 *Indians of Michigan*.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> Howey, Meghan C. L., *Mound Builders and Monument Makers of the Northern Great Lakes, 1200-1600*, University of Oklahoma Press, 2012. Charles Cleland also worked the site in 1965, but left only field notes.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> Kidder, A. V., "Archaeological Work by State Agencies in 1925," American Anthropologist, New Series, Vol. 28, No. 4 (Oct. - Dec., 1926), pp. 679-694; see also Howey, page 199. The westernmost earthwork was assigned State site number 20 MA 11, and the easternmost earthwork 20 MA 12.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>6</sup> Howey, 2006, 276.

vertically in the embankment to make a palisaded wall, so these were not defensive fortifications. Each has an entrance facing the other, and each has an entrance pointing to the northwest.<sup>7</sup>

A third circle was discovered in 1924 by U of M staff in Reeder Township.<sup>8</sup> Eventually another three other enclosures were discovered near this one at the Reeder site, potentially two pairs of circles. Radiocarbon tests place the date between AD 1340-1560, but these four circles in Reeder have not been explored extensively.<sup>9</sup>

Greenman also explored two smaller mounds at the Aetna site, each about 20 feet in diameter, one northeast of the enclosures and the other to the southwest. The mounds are symmetrically opposite each other in relation to the large circles between them.

The mound southwest of the two enclosures contained the cremated remains of a human adult, which appeared to have been cremated on the site. Near the bones was found a copper axe, wrapped in two kinds of bark, which was placed with the remains after the cremation fires had cooled. The mound, like the circles, had been built by digging a wide, shallow, circular trench and piling the soil toward the center. The mound had a rough diameter of 23 feet. Greenman thought this mound was built over what appeared to have been a dwelling, with fire pits on each side that had been used for some years. <sup>10</sup>

The other Aetna mound, northeast of the enclosures and about 17 feet wide and surrounded by a roughly 5-foot wide shallow trench, was found on higher ground, symmetrically opposite the southwestern mound in relation to the two enclosures in the middle. Greenman describes it:

At a depth of 3 feet and 6 inches below the surface at the center was found a male human skeleton, lying southwest and northeast, head to the southwest, the legs tightly flexed so that the bones of the feet were resting alongside the pelvic bones. The left forearm lay across the abdomen, and the right at an angle of 45 degrees to the axis of the trunk. The bones were partially decayed, the ribs, vertebrae, and right and left radii having disappeared altogether. The upper end of the shaft of the left femur had been broken during life and mended without being set, which made it about an inch shorter than the right femur. No artifacts were found with the skeleton, but there were two stones lying in a position indicating that at the time of the burial they had been laid on the chest.<sup>11</sup>

Greenman saw little sign of occupation under this mound, but suggested the mound was near enough to the two enclosures, which he believed to be villages or seasonal dwellings.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup> Howey, 2011, page 119. Although Baird's summary (1976) cites Bosserman as claiming there was a wall, the archeologists Greenman, Cleland, and Howey all say the opposite.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup> Hinsdale, 1925, 45. In sect 26 of Reeder.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>9</sup> Howey, 2012, 141. Greenman's field notes suggest he studied here in 1926, as does Charles Cleland field notes in 1965. Greenman called the circle he studied in Reeder Missaukee #3, and Cleland assigned it site number 20MA19. They have been called variously the Falmouth/Mosquito Creek/Boven enclosures/inclosures/earthworks.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>10</sup> Greenman, 1927, "Michigan Mounds," 4.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup> Greenman, 1927, "Michigan Mounds," 3.

Greenman tentatively concludes, but is eventually proven wrong, that these two mounds are from two different ancient cultures<sup>12</sup> which differ in the details (cremation or burial, copper or none, former dwellings or dedicated burial sites), but share mound-building as a funerary practice. He later speculated that the cremation mound was 500 years older than the burial mound. His emphasis on the differences was strongly diminished by later technology--radiocarbon dating of the material he excavated showed the site had fairly unified dates, around AD 1250. 14

In Howey's assessment,<sup>15</sup> she examined not only the circles and mounds, but also excavated areas all around the site. She found that specific zones around the site seems to be used for specific tasks (cooking here, sweat lodge there) and that these uses were repeated over time. She also found rocks that are foreign to Missaukee, clearly having been brought in from various distant locales, suggesting a social or trading connection to distant lands. She notes the eastern circle was located near a spring, which may have had a symbolic significance, either or both as a symbolic ocean<sup>16</sup> or as a portal to the underworld.<sup>17</sup> She also notes that the Aetna circles are similar to several other sites around northern Michigan, with twin rings near to water features, rather like the additional circles found in Reeder.

Howey concludes that the whole area around the Aetna rings, including the large enclosures and burial mounds, are a ritual gathering point for ceremonial meetings for both coastal fisher-farmer communities and inland forager groups. They gathered in Aetna (and at other similar sites) periodically between AD 1200-1420 for mutual ceremonies, reinforcing with rituals their community fellowship and mythology. <sup>18</sup>

Back in 1926, Greenman suggested there was no evidential connection from the ancient mound-building peoples to the Native American groups that Europeans encountered after AD 1600. <sup>19</sup> Howey, however, notes scholars now agree there was not only consistency of native peoples since ancient times, there were also social changes in Native American society that can be seen in the archeological record. Before AD 1200, Native American society in the Great Lakes had, already for centuries, been highly mobile hunter-gatherers with fluid social boundaries, rather than rigid hierarchies or even tribal structures. Groups moved easily from place to place where resources could be found. But after AD 1200, more

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> Greenman, 1927, 4. The cremation being "Hopewell" and the burial being "Fort Ancient" (a reference to a similar Ohio site). Cf. Hinsdale, 1925, 42.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup> His dating of the burial mound at AD 1250 is based on radiocarbon dating of another, similar site in another county. Fitting, in 1970, radiocarbon dated material Greenman had excavated from an Aetna mound to AD 1070-1320. Howey in 2009 reports a radiocarbon date for pottery found (at her "Station B") to AD 1290-1420 (Howey 2009, 193-194).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup> While Baird reports that Greenman speculated in the 1950s that, since new radiocarbon tests dated a mound in another county to AD 1200, Aetna's northern mound was probably about the same date, and further guessed the southern mound "was put there around AD 400-700." Radiocarbon dating of one of Greenman's mounds was confirmed to be circa 1200, as reported by Fitting in 1975 (p. 244), and as recorded by Howey 2012, page 117.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>15</sup> See Howey, Meghan C. L. and John M. O'Shea, "Bear's Journey and the Study of Ritual in Archaeology" *American Antiquity*, Vol. 71, No. 2 (Apr., 2006), pp. 261-282,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>16</sup> Howey 2006, 274

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup> Howey 2012, 118.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>18</sup> Howey 2012, 118.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>19</sup> Greenman 1926, 5

settled and structured groups formed, particularly around areas of richer resources like fish and maize, clustering around the shore lines and river ways. These became fishers and farmers, which somewhat isolated the foraging inland peoples. Social tribal identities became stronger once groups settled down. For the fisher-farmers, resources could be cultivated better in one place, but also needed defending. Howey suggests earthwork sites were created as a meeting place to maintain bonds between differing groups whose boundaries were becoming more rigid. The Aetna hill site was chosen specifically because it was visible, accessible, and not too near major sources of resources like fishing streams or corn fields—it was a neutral site. <sup>21</sup>

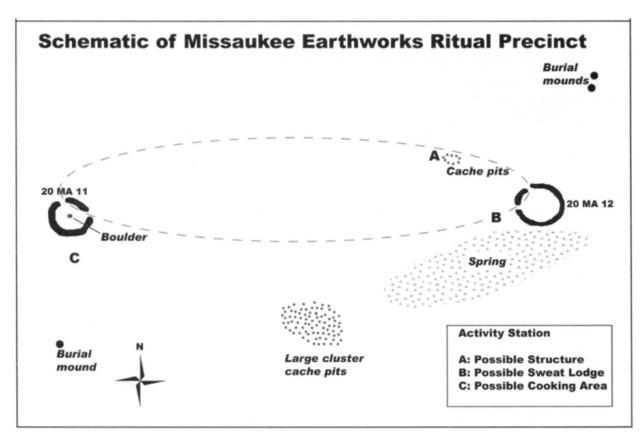


Figure 1:Schematic of the Missaukee Earthworks (20MA11-12) Ritual Precinct with the circular path of "Bear's Journey" (from Howey 2006).

She proposes Native American communities used these earthwork enclosures and burial mounds both to stake territorial resource claim boundaries and to provide an arena for social, economic, and ideological interaction.<sup>22</sup>

More specifically, Howey suggests the whole area around the two circles is an institutional setting for the teaching of worldview beliefs, likely providing a physical stage for liturgies and healing ceremonies, particularly the retelling of "Bear's Journey." In a myth known from later centuries, Bear, a servant of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>20</sup> Howey 2012, 11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup> Howey 2012, 118.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>22</sup> Howey 2012, 11-12.

the Divine, travels a circular path between two earths (or islands) to deliver magical items and secret healing wisdom to the hurting people. He walks through prescribed stations on the path, meets specific creatures, and encounters obstacles along the way, all of which could be enacted on foot at the Aetna site. The myth describes the origin of all native wisdom and lore and was at the center of training initiates into medical, tribal, and other wisdom of how to live in the world. Aetna appears to have been an important periodic gathering spot for cross-tribal interaction and training over time.<sup>23</sup>

Moreover, these dual circles found in Aetna are similar to several others that are positioned not only nearby in Reeder township but in several other counties throughout northern Michigan. A network of twin circles, near water, uniquely accessible by multiple communities, seems to have been built by design. Together they provide gathering anchors for a circuit or regional network of community renewal using mythology like "Bear's Journey."<sup>24</sup>

In short, Howey sees the Aetna earthworks as a typical (though large) gathering point—a temple of sorts—at which both fisher-farmers and hunter-gatherers joined together from AD 1200 to 1450 to ritually renew economic, social, and religious bonds.

# **Before Europeans: Native Algonquin and Iroquois (1450-1830)**

When European explorers first came into what they called the New World, they encountered peoples who had already lived here for some time. Far to the east of Michigan, along what would come to be known as the Canadian Ottawa River, they met a group of people who called themselves the "Algonkin." As the French explorers pushed west, they met other groups who spoke a similar language to the Algonkin and so began to use "Algonquin" as an umbrella name for all these tribes. For the Europeans, Algonquin came to include many tribes, and in Michigan included the Ottawa, Chippewa (or Ojibway), Potawatomi, and Miami. <sup>25</sup> The first native group to be seen by Europeans in the region now known as Michigan were Chippewa at the present site of Sault Ste. Marie in 1622, only two years after the Pilgrims founded the Plymouth colony in Massachusetts. <sup>26</sup>

Over time, Europeans encountered and classified Native Americans into three major groups of the American northeast: Algonquin along the Great Lakes, the Sioux along the Mississippi River and plains, and the Iroquois south of the Great Lakes. <sup>27</sup> In Michigan, Algonquin tribes inhabited the peninsulas, with some Iroquois (from the Huron tribe) pressing in from the southeast of the Lower Peninsula. Greenman notes their differences:

In early times the Algonquin tribes of Michigan all lived in a type of house that was oval and dome-shaped, which was made of bark or matting or the skins of animals laid over bent poles. Inheritance was in the male line in all these tribes. In sharp contrast, the Iroquois tribes spoke a completely different language, lived in bark

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup> Howey 2006 contains considerable exploration of myth variations and how they apply to the Missaukee site.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>24</sup> Howey 2012, 13. See Chapter 5 for more on "Bear's Journey."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>25</sup> Greenman, Emerson F. *Indians of Michigan*, Michigan Historical Society, 1961, pages 1, 8.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>26</sup> Ibid. 10.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>27</sup> Ibid, 1.

houses that were rectangular in outline, and inheritance was in the female line. There were many other differences between these two peoples.<sup>28</sup>

In the 1600s, the lower peninsula of Michigan was somewhat a border zone between the Iroquois to the southeast and the Algonquin in eastern Wisconsin. The Iroquois seem to have been aggressively pushing the Algonquin westward.<sup>29</sup>

Technologically, the Algonquin of Michigan in 1650 demonstrated skills Greenman compares to the Neolithic Period (7000 BC-4000 BC) east of the Mediterranean Sea. They practiced agriculture where the climate allowed, their knives, arrowheads, and axe heads were made of stone, and they made implements from clay pottery. Hunting and gathering natural resources was the major mode of supply. In modest contrast, the Iroquois were more likely to be farmers, with substantial fields of corn, squash, and beans surrounding their settlements. While the mound builders centuries earlier left evidence of textile weaving and copper metal-working, none of the Native Americans in the 1600s had yet mastered splitting trees into planks for lumber, building stone walls or chimneys, metal working, or cloth weaving. Their clothes were animal skins. In the 1600s had yet mastered splitting trees were animal skins.

After AD 1700, Algonquin Potawatomi came into southwestern Michigan from southern Wisconsin and built rows of cigar-shaped earthworks, known as "garden beds," but these are not related to the funerary mounds or enclosures found in Missaukee.<sup>32</sup>

In 1702, Frenchman Antoine Cadillac moved from commanding Fort Michilimackinac to establish Fort Pontchartrain on the present site of Detroit, in order to control better all travel and trade around the Michigan area. The strategy was effective, and from 1701-1760 the Indian settlements around Fort Pontchartrain grew.<sup>33</sup>

Native American tribes had alliances and conflicts among themselves, just as the French, English, and Dutch were in conflict over European power in the New World. In the earliest years when Indians outnumbered Europeans, they all made alliances with one another, French with one tribe, English with another, and often the motivation for natives was as much an attempt to gain leverage over another traditional tribal enemy more than to resist the Europeans. The Europeans likewise attempted to weaken other Europeans by encouraging their Indian allies to attack the allies of their opponent.

In 1712, the English encouraged their native allies to lay siege to the French Fort Pontchartrain, which they did for 19 days. Many men, women, and children were killed, and when the besiegers retreated, they were hunted down and executed.<sup>34</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>28</sup> Ibid, 2.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>29</sup> Ibid, 25.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> Ibid, 3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup> Ibid, 3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>32</sup> Ibid, 17.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup> Ibid, 26-28.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>34</sup> Ibid, 28-29.

By 1761, the French had largely ceded to the English in the Great Lakes, a transition which the Indians resisted. On May 10, 1763, Chief Pontiac led a group of about 800 Indians to lay siege of the now English Fort Pontchartrain in Detroit. On June 2, 1763, a group of Chippewa sacked the fort at Mackinaw City and massacred its inhabitants. A peace treaty was signed about three years later, in 1766, only a decade or so before the American Revolution.<sup>35</sup>

A direct descendant of the famed Ottawa chief Pontiac, a great-great-grandson named James W. Pontiac, lived in Missaukee County during the 1900s. He was born about 1863 in a lodge on Big Stone Creek near Hersey in Osceola county. He was named Wauwasum, meaning "lightning," and was the descendent of Nebaquom, meaning "Walk in the Woods," who was the only son of chief Pontiac with male children.<sup>36</sup>

According to Baird, he came to Missaukee County in 1923, where he and his family lived in a cabin three miles north and a mile east of McBain. "A lumberman and log roller, James Pontiac was listed as a member of the Grand River band of Ottawas in a 1909 census conducted by Special Agent Horace B. Durant of the U.S. Bureau of Indian Affairs. The census recorded his age at that time as 46. James Pontiac was known to his Missaukee neighbors and acquaintances as 'Chief Pontiac.' He and his wife had sixteen children, of whom five daughters were still alive at the time of Baird's report in 1976. One of their three sons, Cecil, died in military action in Europe during World War II. The oldest and last survivor of the sons, Jesse, died in 1972. James Pontiac died in 1962 at the age of 99."<sup>37</sup> He was honored with a plaque hung in the county courthouse in 1976 by the Bicentennial Committee as a representative of all Missaukee Native Americans.<sup>38</sup>

# **US Surveyors: 1830-1860**

The federal government surveyed the land that became Missaukee county first in the 1830s and then again in the 1850s. The result was a series of township maps (and presumably physical markers on the land) that not only documented topographical features like rivers and swamps but also laid out section lines for future property boundaries.<sup>39</sup>

Maps in the Michigan Archives include:

- 21N 05W Holland, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Artemus Curtis in 1852
- 21N 06W <u>Clam Union</u>, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Wright L. Coffinbury in 1852
- 21N 07W <u>Riverside</u>, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Francis Coleman in 1856
- 21N 08W Richland, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Wright L. Coffinbury in 1853
- 22N 05W <u>Butterfield</u>, measured by John Brink in 1837 &1838, and Artemus Curtis in 1852
- 22N 06W <u>Aetna</u>, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Wright L. Coffinbury in 1853
- 22N 07W Reeder, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Wright L. Coffinbury in 1853

-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>35</sup> Ibid, 30-32.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>36</sup> Kimball, Kendrick, "Heir to All the Area but He Can't Collect," Detroit News, 13 Jun 1948.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup> As reported in Baird, 1976, from genealogical research by Madalynn Sundel of McBain.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>38</sup> "Plaque Hung" Waterfront, 22 Dec 1976.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup> The maps are held in the State of Michigan Archives, accessible on <a href="www.seekingmichigan.org">www.seekingmichigan.org</a> in 2014.

- 22N 08W Lake, measured by John Brink in 1837 and Wright L. Coffinbury in 1853
- 23N 05W Enterprise, measured by John Brink in 1838 and Artemus Curtis in 1852
- 23N 06W West Branch, measured by J. Brink in 1838 & 1839, and Thomas Whelpley in 1853
- 23N 07W Forest, measured by John Brink in 1838 and Thomas Whelpley in 1853
- 23N 08W <u>Caldwell</u>, measured by John Brink in 1838 and Thomas Whelpley in 1852
- 24N 05W Norwich East, measured in by Brink in 1839 and G.H. Cannon and A. Curtis in 1852
- 24N 06W Norwich West, measured by Brink in 1839, Cannon in 1852, & Whelpley in 1853
- 24N 07W Pioneer, measured by John Brink in 1838 and Thomas Whelpley in 1852
- 24N 08W Bloomfield, measured by John Brink in 1838 and Thomas Whelpley in 1853

#### **Surveying in the 1830s**

The names of the surveyors are included on the maps, and these men are sometimes referred to as the first white men known to have set foot in Missaukee. John Brink (1811-1904) and his surveying party surveyed the county first in the 1830s, marking out township by township, month by month. Brink and team surveyed about 98 townships in northern Michigan from at least 1836-1839, likely the first people to take a careful accounting of the land in several counties. Notably, Michigan was granted statehood on January 27, 1837, right in the middle of Brink's surveying period.

In interviews published in the 1890s, <sup>40</sup> John Brink was described as "still living at Crystal Lake, III., a hale, hearty old gentleman of 88 years." Brink recounts, "In 1838 I went to Michigan and surveyed a strip 150 miles long and twenty-four miles wide into townships. In that tract I surveyed a reservation of 70,000 acres for the Ottawa Indians." He speaks colorfully of encountering the occasional Native American, only once with conflict, and of an encounter with mother bear.

Brink describes the surveying lifestyle: "Our surveying party had two chainmen, an axeman, a cook, a packman, and myself. We seldom camped more than two nights in one place. Our camp equipment was reduced to the barest necessities and we were not supplied with guns to defend ourselves from either wild beasts or Indians. Our expeditions would last from five to eleven months. Sometimes we had to build a cache for our supplies. They were usually made of big logs built up enclosing a hollow square, proof against both large and small animals. We had three pack horses, and our packman was kept busy moving our camp and packing our supplies from the cache to the camp. One had to be an experienced woodman to be able to do this work.

"Every other day after our work was done we would have to locate the new camp the packman and cook had made. I think I know something of the hardships of pioneer life, for I have waded through miles of swamp, and on more than one occasion have had to swim streams when the ice was running.

"I think I do not exaggerate when I say I have been three months at a time without having all my clothes dry on me at one time. When we get into camp at night we are ready to eat our supper and lay down

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>40</sup> "Big Foot's Lovely Lake," Chicago Tribune, 27 Sep 1891, and "John Brink, An Old Government Surveyor," The Milwaukee Sentinel, January 29, 1899

and sleep. No time to set around a campfire and dry wet clothes, and it made too much luggage to carry extra suits. You may rest assured we had no fancy smoking gowns, pajamas, or night shirts."

#### Surveying in the 1850s

Twenty years later, several other surveyors came through again, just as "lumber cruisers" began scouting for prime timber lands. Francis Coleman (1819-1890), George H. Cannon (1826-1909), Artemus Curtis (1828-1900), Wright L. Coffinbury (or Coffinberry), <sup>41</sup> and Thomas Whelpley (1797-1881) surveyed Missaukee in the 1850s, adding section lines and details.

Notably, these maps marked swamp lands, and, by legislation, the 40-acre subsections that touched swamp lands on these maps were automatically given to the government. Years later, state swamp script could be earned from the state by building roads, and the script could be redeemed for this state swamp land. The script had a nominal value of \$1.25 per acre, but the non-swamp area of such parcels could range from 1 to 39 acres, and may be timber, rocks, or soil, so the script had an uncertain value.<sup>42</sup>

<sup>41</sup> Wright Lewis Coffinberry (5 April 1807 - 26 March 1889) had a storied career in Michigan surveying and archeology, including excavating in Missaukee. See <a href="http://grplpedia.grpl.org/wiki/images/0/05/061.pdf">http://grplpedia.grpl.org/wiki/images/0/05/061.pdf</a> for more on his life.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>42</sup> See George Stout's "History of Missaukee" for more on how swamp script was used in pioneer times.

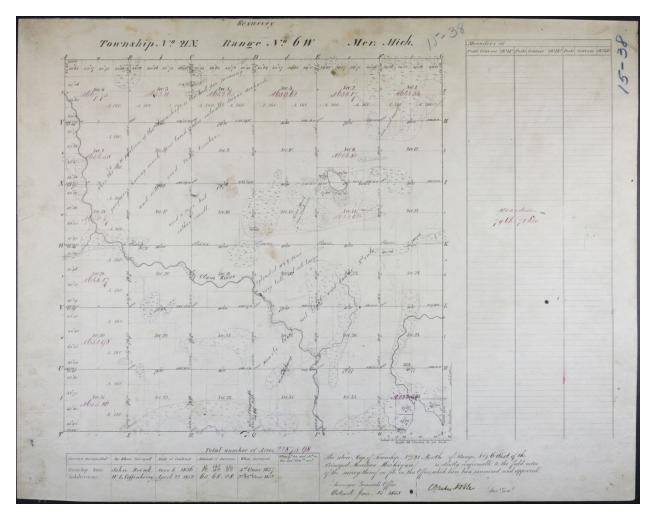


Figure 2: Survey Map of Clam Union Township, by John Brink in 1837, updated by Coffinberry in 1852

# **Speculators and Lumbermen (1855-1870)**

The commercial interests that drove Euro-Americans into the forests of northern Michigan were first logging timber and second farm homesteading. Government tract books, which list every section in every township of frontier counties all over the USA, record who claimed what land from the government. The books note swamp land sections and record the names of both lumber interests (including lumber barons like Blodgett and Ryerson), and homestead claimants.

Lumber camps were the first, if temporary, dwellings of Euro-Americans in Missaukee. When the pioneers like Dan Reeder came looking for land, they stopped at lumber camps already here. <sup>43</sup> Just a couple years after the first homesteaders came, when the first Board of Supervisors gathered on June 6, 1871 for their first meeting, they met at the headquarters and farm of a lumber firm known as Perley-Palmer & Co., a couple of miles northeast of Falmouth. The book-keeper for the company, Eugene W. Watson, was the first County Clerk and the first Postmaster. Such lumbermen may not have been permanent residents, but in significant ways they were the first European pioneers.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>43</sup> Reeder, Daniel, memoirs, *Plain Dealer*, May 19, 1897.

As one summary describes camp life: "After the timber cruisers found the best stands of pine, the crew would come in and build a camp, which consisted of a bunkhouse [and a] cook shanty which had a dining room and kitchen, the most important part of camp. There was a blacksmith and a carpenter as well as a granary and barn for the animals. The camp store would have the basic supplies needed by the men, such as clothes and tobacco. These buildings were not very well built, as they were often meant to be temporary, to be moved when the trees were gone. Each camp typically had two foremen, about seventy men, twenty teams of horses and seven yoke of oxen. The men came to the camp in late fall or early winter, as logging was a cold weather job. The food was plentiful, if boring. The usual meal would be bread, potatoes, tea, beans, and pork. The crews worked from about 4 a.m. until dusk, even eating the noon meal in the woods. The horses and oxen, on the other hand, were very well treated and rarely overworked."

The trees they cut first had to be trimmed of tops and branches, and then the logs were moved from where they were cut to the banks of rivers. In winter, logs were stacked and stamped with a logger's mark, awaiting the spring thaw. When the snow melted, the logs were rolled into the swollen rivers and floated to the mills, where they could be sorted by mark and cut into lumber. Each step in the process presented challenges. The cutting left stumps, which had to be pulled or burned to clear the field for plowing. The trimming left branches, needles, and tops on ground, which dried into tinder for deadly forest fires. Getting the heavy logs to rivers spurred ice-covered pathways and temporary railroads. The unpredictable rivers could be too dry or full, keeping the logs from moving or damaging property (like the Falmouth dam) downstream.

Lumber was the first major financial industry in Michigan--it made some very rich, it employed thousands upon thousands, but it was a boom industry. Once forests were decimated, the camps, mills, transports, and whole towns that supported them either moved or closed down.

For example, a group of Dutch immigrants who crossed the Atlantic together from the province of Groningen in 1867 (including names like Bronkema, Koster, Wierenga, Blaauw (Blue), Ekster, Bakker, Van Singel, Doornbos, and Huizenga), settled first in Spring Lake, Michigan, at the mouth of the Grand River in Ottawa county. For about 20 years, the group made a living there while the lumber mills were at full capacity as logs came down the Grand River. But lumbering in the Grand valley collapsed around 1880, just as it reached its peak volume. Mills closed, and many were out of work. <sup>45</sup> Around 1884, several of those Dutch families immigrated again as a group, this time from Ottawa to Missaukee county in order to take up farms and join the colony started by Jan Vogel.

<sup>44</sup> http://www.michigan-history.org/lumbering/LumberingBriefHistory.html, as of 19 Aug 2016

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>45</sup> In 1876, "Grand Haven had eight saw and shingle mills employing 258 men.... Spring Lake had nine saw and shingle mills employing 509 men" (Lillie, *Historic Grand Haven*, p346). In 1886, "The lumbering industry was rapidly becoming obsolete. The forests had been depleted. There was no longer any logs to be had. Mills were rapidly being dismantled and the machinery shipped to more fertile fields for that business. The old mills would soon be a thing of the past and their passing was a hard blow to the progress of Grand Haven" (Lillie, *Historic Grand Haven*, 369-370).

Lumbering continued in Missaukee for some time, but the Muskegon River watershed reached its peak around 1890. 46 By the 1920s, the town of Jennings, which was once over a thousand residents and was larger than Cadillac, had special trucks physically lift many of the houses and transport them to new neighborhoods in Cadillac. 47

# **Homesteaders and Pioneers (1867-1900)**

The federal Land Act of 1820 allowed homesteaders to purchase cheap land from the government, at a minimum of 80 acres at \$1.25 an acre, or \$100. The Homestead Act of 1862 gave free land to those promised to improve, farm, and live on the land for at least five years. In either case, one had to scout for good land, file a claim at a land office (like Traverse City), physically mark the claim, likely relocate family and goods though wilderness with no roads, and then build homes to live in, clear the fields for agriculture, and make a living.<sup>48</sup>

The first homestead claims (as opposed lumber and other claims) were filed on Missaukee lands in 1867. Exactly who was "first in Missaukee" is often disputed, not least because accomplishing all the tasks in the process may take months or years—some filed first, but others may have built homes before the first filers. Some may have filed and proved their claims, but only by doing the minimum necessary rather than building a legacy. The following timeline is documented from government tract book records, <sup>49</sup> genealogical records, and personal memoirs.

#### **Backstories Before 1867: Coming to Missaukee**

- Alson Ferris appears to be Henry Alson Ferris, born 1844 in New York to Nicolas Ferris and Nancy Dunn Ferris. 50 He grew up in New York, and his father died when Henry was a boy. Henry left his mother and several siblings behind to come west at age 23 to file the first Missaukee homestead claim in 1867.
- Jan Vogel was born on 8 Sep 1839 in Giessen-Nieuwkerk, Giessenlanden, Zuid-Holland, Netherlands. He immigrated in 1854 as a 15-year-old apprentice, and served (and was wounded) in the Civil War in the early 1860s. After his service, he returned to the Netherlands to collect his parents, built (and lost) a mill in Ottawa county, and married Betje Herweyer on 23 Jun 1867 in Ottawa county. In October 1867, he led a team sent by a group of Dutch homesteaders to find a suitable place for a new community in northern Michigan. He records,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>46</sup> Jan Vogel's memoirs record the boom and bust of the Ducey Lumber Co., for example.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>47</sup> See, for example Eldridge, Judy. "The Ghosts of Jennings Remain," *The Missaukee Sentinel*, 30 May 1994, and Kleene, Tom. "The '22 Truck That Moved Jennings," *Detroit Free Press*, 23 May 1982.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup> Cf. the famous Laura Ingalls Wilder book series, which are memoirs of homesteading on the prairies.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>49</sup> See "United States Bureau of Land Management Tract Books, 1800-c. 1955," images, *FamilySearch* https://familysearch.org/search/collection/2074276

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>50</sup> His name appears as Alson Ferris occasionally when he was a child on census records, and the dates and locations of his timeline match up well with the homesteading claim of 1867. He may have had siblings in the Civil War. He married and had several children shortly after coming to Missaukee, and lived the rest of his life in Northern Michigan, mostly in Petoskey.

- "October 1867; went on foot east and north from Middle Branch and Clam River, where we found much government land." <sup>51</sup>
- **Hendrik Westveld** was born 25 Jan 1830 in Veendam, Groningen, Netherlands. The youngest child of five surviving children, both of his parents died when he was 3 years old. He immigrated about 1857 at age 27, served in the Civil War in his young 30s, and came to Missaukee with Vogel in 1867 at age 37.
- Washington Richardson was born 18 Dec 1825, in Washington County, Pennsylvania. He married Christina Frock (b. 22 May 1824 in Coshocton, Ohio) around 1845. Marion D.
   Richardson was born to them on 10 Apr 1846 in Tuscarora, Ohio. While they lived in Ohio, they had Thomas (1848), William (1849), George (1851), and Elisabeth (1854). They moved to Jasper county Indiana and had Lewis (1857) and Mathilda (1859). Marion apparently served in the 48<sup>th</sup> Indiana Infantry in the Civil War in the early 1860s. His little sister Mathilda died at age 6 in 1865.
- William Morey was born in New York 26 Sep 1839, the middle of three children of Christopher P Morey and Jane Hutchens Morey. He came to Michigan to file a claim around age 27.
- Daniel Reeder was born 24 Jun 1833 in Newmarket, York, Ontario, Canada to Emon Reeder and Elizabeth Randall Reeder. He married Elizabeth Bateman on 15 Feb 1855. They had five children, Agnes, George, Orillia, John, and Elizabeth. Daniel became a widower when his wife Elizabeth died a couple weeks after giving birth to baby Elizabeth in 1865, according to genealogical records. Baby Elizabeth also likely did not survive.<sup>52</sup>

#### 1867: The First Claims

- Alson Ferris filed a claim in what is now Pioneer (24N, 7W, sect. 34, SW1/4) on **5 October 1867**, at age 23, receiving a deed in 1874. In 1902, Mary Reeder claims, without documentation, Ferris proved the claim but never actually resided on the land. There is no memoir or documentation on when he took up residence. Yet he proved the claim, and in a legal sense was the first homesteader. There is also no evidence he lived elsewhere until the 1880 US Federal census (when he was in Fife Lake). He does not appear to be on the 1870 census, which might be consistent with a single man's pioneer life in unincorporated Missaukee.
- Jan Vogel (at age 28, with three others) filed homestead claims on 7 Nov 1867, founding Vogel Center in Clam Union (21N, 6W, sect. 20). Henry Westveld, Lucas Dewart, <sup>53</sup> and Roelf Bos <sup>54</sup> also filed on 7 Nov 1867 in Clam Union. Westveld and Dewart cancelled their claims and never received a deed, but may have passed the option on the land to others. Also on 7 Nov 1867, a Henry Zagers, aka Jager, filed a claim in Riverside (21N, 7W, sect 24 SE) and received the deed in 1872.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>51</sup> A direct translation from his original Dutch memoir, now called the "Family Records Book" in the Calvin College archives, pp-23-24.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>52</sup> Only four Reeder children immigrate to Missaukee, according to Duvall, and Elizabeth is not in the 1870 census <sup>53</sup> The may be a pseudonym for Jacob Herweyer, since he was known to have been in the Vogel party, and he eventually claims this land. He was only 16 on this journey.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>54</sup> This may be a pseudonym for Jan Vogel, as Roelof Bos cancelled the claim in 1869 and Frans Vogel, Jan's father, took it up. No Roelof Bos is otherwise mentioned in connection with the Vogel party.

- Hendrick J. Abbing filed a claim in Clam Union (24N, 6W, sect 10, NW1/4) just a few days later, on 11 November 1867, and received a deed in 1872. A claim was filed in the name of Gerret Herweyer for the SW ¼ 21N, 6W, sect 10 also on 11 November 1867. After filing in Traverse City, Vogel, Westveld, Jager, and Abbing (and presumably Herweyer) returned to Missaukee briefly in late 1867, possibly to mark their claims, and then went back to Ottawa county to prepare their families and goods.
- Washington Richardson, at age 41, filed on **27 Nov 1867** in Pioneer (24N, 7W, sect. 28). According to his son Marion, they did not occupy the claim until 1868.<sup>56</sup>
- **William Morey**, age 27, filed on **7 Dec 1867** in Pioneer (24N 7W, sect. 24, NE1/4). There is no known documentation of when residence began on the claim.

#### 1868

- According to his memoirs, Jan Vogel, with Westveld, Jager, Abbing, and Jakob Herweyer, arrived in Missaukee on 18 April 1868.
  - Vogel recounts, "On April 6, 1868,<sup>57</sup> with my wife and one child Derkje, my wife's brother Jakob [Herweyer, about age 17], and his sister Eiftje [Herweyer, about age 14], Hendrik Zagers and his wife, Hendrik Westveld, and Jan Abbing, left for Missaukee County, using wagons as conveyance."
  - They arrived after a twelve-day trip from Ottawa, via Big Rapids to replace two wagon wheels and buying \$30.00 worth of provisions. Upon arrival they erected cabins and began to clear land.
  - Leonard Herweyer's memoirs confirm that the Vogel party left Ottawa in the spring settled into their new homes "in May."
- Marion D. Richardson, at age 21, filed on 4 April 1868 in Pioneer (24N, 7W, sect. 26, SW1/4, and again on 3 Nov 1868 for section 34).
  - According to Marion's memoir, Washington and Marion Richardson occupied their claims in May 1868.<sup>58</sup> Marion received the deed on section 34 first, in just over a year.
- Daniel Reeder filed on 18 May 1868, founding Lake City (22N, 7W, sect. 6).
  - According to his own memoirs, Dan Reeder first saw Muskrat Lake on 12 May 1868, and went to Traverse to file a claim on 17 May.
  - Reeder returned from Traverse, via Big Rapids, to Missaukee on 16 June with his brother William and others. They built a 14x20 log cabin before leaving Missaukee for Ontario to retrieve his family and goods.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>55</sup> Leonard Herweyer suggests this was his brother Jacob's land. Maybe Jacob filed a claim for his brother Geert?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>56</sup> Richardson, Marion D., "Northern Missaukee's First White Settlers," *Missaukee Republican*, Lake City Michigan, 27 February 1936. Included in the Hirzel Collection.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>57</sup> The original Dutch memoirs clearly state they left Ottawa on 6 April 1868, and arrived 12 days later on 18 April. The month of departure appears to be a typographical translator's error in Vogel's English memoirs. In most English version, It reads "October," but then Vogel immediately says they arrived 12 days later in April. This error led Lucas to speculate they wintered in Big Rapids for six months (which would be a strange choice), but this singleword error is the only evidence of such an intense layover. See the discussion in the footnotes in Vogel's memoirs.

<sup>58</sup> Richardson, Marion D., "Northern Missaukee's First White Settlers," *Missaukee Republican*, Lake City Michigan, 27 February 1936. Included in the Hirzel Collection.

- **Abraham Stout** filed on **13 Sep 1868** in Riverside (21N, 8W, sect. 29, SW1/4). There is no known documentation of when residence began on the claim.
- **Daniel Reeder** returned to Missaukee from Canada via Traverse City in **October 1868** "with his 4 children and 2 fine horses (Bob and Bill), clothes, and furniture to start a new home." <sup>59</sup>

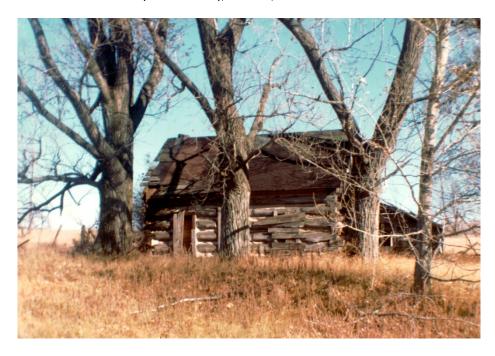


Figure 3: A 1972 photo of a homestead-style log cabin, off M42 in Missaukee

#### 1869

- Both **David White** and **James White** filed claims on **1 Feb 1869** in Caldwell (23N, 8W, sect. 20), according to tract book records. There is no known documentation of when residence began on the claim.
- On **14 February 1869**, **Marion D. Richardson**, at age 22, having returned briefly to Jasper, Indiana, marries Sarah Shirer (b 1848 in Ohio).
- James Cavanaugh filed a homestead claim on 16 June 1869 on 160 acres of NE sec. 22, 21N7W, Riverside., next to his brother William. Both received the deed 27 June 1874.
- On 1 Jul 1869, Marion D Richardson receives the deed for his 1868 claim in Pioneer, 24N, 7W, sect. 34.
- **John Cavanaugh** filed on **12 Oct 1869** on E NE and NW NE of Sec 14, 21N7W. William, James, and John all appear in the 1870 census.
- Many others file claims in 1869, including John Meyering, Ralph Veen, Jan Jagt, Jakob Quist, Cornelius Quist, and John Westdorp.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>59</sup> Mary Minthorn Duvall reports he returned "in May," but she likely means he first arrived and filed a claim in the spring of 1868. Daniel and Agnes' memoirs both say the Reeder family then returned to Missaukee permanently in October 1868. Dan Reeder's daughter Orillia reports on the 1900, 1910, and 1920 censuses that she immigrated to the US in 1869. Her siblings report various years from 1864, 1867, and 1868.

#### 1870s and beyond

- Henry Alson Ferris lived in Fife Lake by 1880, eventually moved to Petoskey, and died in 1911.
- Jan Vogel helped organize the county in 1871 and served in several political offices. He built a small store and donated land for a church and school in 1872. He rented his farm and took up lumbering, eventually moving to Muskegon and the southern United States as a lumber businessman. He died in Muskegon in 1907
- **Henry Westveld** marries Katriena Hulsebos in Virginia in 1870 and starts a family in Missaukee, but they left in 1878 according to church records. He spent over ten years in Missaukee since filing his claim but never received the deed. They settle in Grant in Oceana county, where he died in 1911.
- Jakob Herweyer marries Fennigje Eising on 18 Dec 1885, when he was he 34 and she was only 14. They had thirteen children together and lived their whole lives in Missaukee. Jakob died in 1933, and Fennigje died in 1949.
  - Jakob's brother Gerrit Herweyer married Fennigje's sister Jantje Eising in 1884 (when he was 37 and she was 15), and they had 12 children, also living out their days in
     Missaukee. Gerrit died in 1928 and Jantje died in 1949.
  - Sister lefje (Eva) Herweyer died at age 17 on 04 Apr 1872 in Missaukee.
- **Henry Zagers** (aka Hendrik Jager) and **Hendrick Jan Abbing**, all make appearances in memoirs and documents of the pioneer days, but have proven difficult to trace either before or after their time in Missaukee.
- Washington Richardson lived in Missaukee through most of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. He was elected County Treasurer in 1872. His wife Christina died at age 52 in 1876 in Pioneer township. He lived for a time with several of his children in his later years, and died at age 89 in 1915, and was buried in Missaukee.
- Marion Richardson was elected county clerk in 1872, a year after the county was organized.
   According to Stout, he was licensed to practice law by the 1880s. He lived in Missaukee until after 1900, when he moved to Lansing in his 50s. He and Sarah had four children. They both died in 1937, he at age 91 and she at 89. The rest of his Richardson siblings either died young or moved out of state.
- William Morey marries Emma R (last name unknown, b. 1850 in Wisconsin) at some time in his 30s, during the 1870s. They live in Missaukee the rest of their lives. William died in 1909, and Emma in 1925. No children have yet been documented.
- Daniel Reeder remarries in 1872, to Mary Elizabeth Quick. They have more children, Martin and Mary.<sup>60</sup>

#### So Who Was First?

Notably, the government records and testimony of the pioneers themselves bear witness that most histories of Missaukee pioneers, from Mary Reeder's 1902 paper well into the 21<sup>st</sup> century, are mistaken about "who was first."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>60</sup> One history says there were three, but records for a second Elizabeth have been difficult to find.

Native Americans were obviously first centuries ago. And probably well over a hundred Europeans had camped in Missaukee for months and years as surveyors or lumbermen, and indeed were living here when pioneers arrived to homestead. The settlers were never in a completely empty forest.

But even in terms of just those long-term, legacy-building pioneers, Washington Richardson and certainly Daniel Reeder were clearly NOT the first to either file claims nor to build homes in Missaukee. HA Ferris was legally first, but might be dismissed as doing only the legal minimum necessary to procure a deed, and therefore might be ignored for not leaving a legacy. But the several Dutch families in the Vogel party were the first in both filing claims and building log cabins, if only by a few weeks in each case. Washington Richardson was soon behind them, but if this was an Olympic sport, he doesn't even get the bronze.

And since some other settlers left us fewer details with which to nail down their exact timelines, it might be most prudent to answer the "Who Was First?" question by simply saying several different groups of families nearly simultaneously filed claims in 1867 and then built homes in 1868, pioneering Missaukee together. No one was altogether first.

# From Frontier to Naming a County

With homesteaders establishing a firm, permanent foothold, the Michigan legislature politically organized Missaukee as an independent county in 1871. Townships were carved from one another over time, mostly based on where enough people were living to hold offices and pay taxes. The homesteaders elected county and township officials from amongst themselves and began building a community.

It was customary for the government to use Native American words for county names, and most of the proposed counties of northern Michigan originally had Indian names, according to Jenks, though many were later changed to curry political favor with minor politicians in Washington DC.

Missaukee county may have been named for either a native tribe or a particular chief, or both, as the names of both the tribe and the chief may well have a common origin.

The state government's official *Michigan Manual* (in the 1955-56 and subsequent versions) claims that Missaukee was "named for a prominent Indian chief of that region, who was better known as 'Nesaukee.'"<sup>61</sup> Emerson Greenman, in his *The Indians of Michigan*, writes that in 1763, following the Pontiac rebellion, Nessewkee (or Nesaukee) was the chief of an Ottawa village of nearly a thousand people at L'Arbre Croche (now Cross Village) on the shore of Lake Michigan in Emmet county. <sup>62</sup> Jenks records "Missaukee County was named for an Ottawa chief, who signed the treaties of 1831 and 1833. The meaning of the word is somewhat uncertain. <sup>63</sup>

Verwyst says that Missaukee is a corruption of *missisaging*, meaning at large mouth of river. Another derivation is from *Mississauga*, "an Indian tribe at one time living at the northern end of Georgian Bay,

<sup>62</sup> Greenman, 1961, 30,

<sup>61</sup> Baird

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>63</sup> Note the 60-year gap between the 1763 Nesaukee and this treaty-signing chief—likely not the same person.

the word meaning people of wide mouth river."<sup>64</sup> One clan of the Chippewa were the Missisagi, sometimes referred to as the Crane clan. "Its name is a compound and means "a large (or several) outlets." The Missisauga River near Toronto is named for them, which is where they were first encountered in 1634, though they also spent time in Michigan.<sup>65</sup> There's no indication this tribe lived in Missaukee itself. Rather the county was named simply in the honor of an Indian name used for both tribes and chiefs.

For more personal histories on pioneering, see the various memoirs of the immigrants and homesteaders. For more about how Missaukee established itself and grew from frontier to community, see George Stout's histories, one from 1891 and another from 1917.

-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>64</sup> Jenks, William L., "History and Meaning of County Names of Michigan," Historical Collections, Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, Vol 38, 439-478, 1910. Page 467. Available online at <a href="https://archive.org/details/historicalcollec38mich">https://archive.org/details/historicalcollec38mich</a>

# The History of Missaukee County, 1871-1917 (1917)

Second transcription edition, updated August 2016

Written [circa 1917] by George Stout, [describing the years] 1871-1917. Copied [circa 1964] by Fred C. Hirzel from "Copy 111", and [added] in parentheses some explanations, comments, etc. [Transcribed in 2013 by Steven Koster, with notes in brackets. <sup>66</sup>]

#### [Preface]

[George Stout was a newspaper man through the turn of the 20<sup>th</sup> century in Missaukee County, Michigan, and apparently completed this history in 1917. In 1964, Fred C. Hirzel, a Missaukee County native and local historian, typed out a copy of Stout's history, making comments and adding additional content along the way. <sup>67</sup> The resulting document is a dialog of sorts between the two men on the early history of Missaukee.

Stout's sources seem to be his own *Story of the Year* from 1891, county records, meeting minutes, and newspaper archives. What is surprisingly missing from Stout's work generally is much sense of the Dutch-American immigration that drove much of the growth of Missaukee county's earliest years. Perhaps the tight-knit Dutch-speaking community seemed foreign to Stout's intended audiences.]

# [1870s: Creating a County]

# [1871]

#### [Organizing Missaukee]

Prior to the act of the legislature in 1871 organizing Missaukee County, it had been attached first to Manistee, and then [when] Wexford was set off from Manistee, it [Missaukee] became part of Wexford.

In 1869, the supervisors of Wexford, it is supposed, organized the whole of Missaukee County as one township, called Reeder, and the first tax [was] levied that year [by Wexford county].

Later, probably in the act of organizing the county [in 1871], the township[s] of Pioneer ([and,] embracing the whole tier of townships,) Quilna (including what is now Caldwell only), Clam Union (comprising [also] the present township of Holland), and Riverside (including the present Richland) were

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>66</sup> Transcribed from a facsimile contained in "The Fred C. Hirzel Collection" housed in the Grand Rapids Public Library (call number: M977.466 M691). It includes this note: "Copies of the Fred C. Hirzel Papers are from those at the Clarke Historical Library, Central Michigan University, Mt. Pleasant." This collection appears to have been photocopied and bound for other libraries, including the Grand Rapids Public Library. A cleaner copy can be found in the Missaukee Library. See <a href="http://quod.lib.umich.edu/c/clarke/ehll--hirzel">http://quod.lib.umich.edu/c/clarke/ehll--hirzel</a>.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>67</sup> Transcriber's headings and editorial comments are in square brackets. Footnotes are the transcriber's. For the ease of reading, punctuation, spelling, and style corrections are added throughout but are unmarked. Occasionally a paragraph has been moved to keep the events mentioned in chronological order. Hirzel appeared to be trying to document Stout's original page numbers, but these are omitted here.

organized. The rest of the county [townships that emerged later], which comprised West Branch, Enterprise, Butterfield, Aetna, Forest, Reeder, and Lake, were left in Reeder [Township].

The Organization Act of the Legislature, passed in 1871, provided that a temporary County Seat should be located at Falmouth until June 1873, at which time the voters of the county would fix the permanent location.

#### [First County Government]

An election was held in the spring of 1871. No official record of it remains, but it appears from later records that the following persons were elected to the several county offices:

• Judge of Probate: John Vogel

• Sherriff: Gillis McBain

• Clerk and Register: E.W. Watson

Treasurer: Ira Van MeterSurveyor: Abraham Stout

There being no lawyer in the county, the circuit Judge, Thomas J. Ramsdall of Traverse City, appointed Lyman H. Gage, of that city, prosecuting attorney. Unofficial records say 41 votes, all Republican, were cast at this election for state officers. [Presumably, township Supervisors were also elected to serve on the County Board of Supervisors.]

The first Board of Supervisors met at what was known as the Perley Farm, a couple of miles northeast of Falmouth. This was the farm and headquarter camp of a lumber firm known as Perley-Palmer & Co. The book-keeper for the company, E.W. Watson, was the County Clerk. Present [at this meeting]: Daniel Reeder of Reeder, Wm. J. Morey of Pioneer, John Vogel of Clam Union, and Henry Van Meter of Riverside. This was June 6, 1871. Next day, James White, supervisor of Quilna, arrived and took his place on the board.



designated the official newspaper.

Finances were of first importance, and the treasury was empty, no (county) tax having been spread the previous year. A bond issue of \$5000, bearing ten percent interest, was authorized, \$3000 to be sold at once for running expenses. Salaries of county officers were fixed as follows:

- Clerk, \$500 per year
- Treasurer, \$250
- Probate Judge, \$100
- Prosecuting Attorney, \$200

Treasurer Van Meter resigned, disappointed at the salary fixed, and Washington Reeder was named in his stead.

A bargain was made with Pearly-Palmer & Co., to build offices; 12 x 16 feet each for the Clerk and Treasurer, with a second story to be used as a court room, for which the board agreed to pay \$115 per year rent. The *Osceola Outline* of Hersey was

It was agreed that pine lands should be assessed at \$4 per acre, first class farm land at \$2, and pine stump land at \$1.25 acre.

The first capitalization by the Supervisors was as follows:

	Real Estate	Personal
Clam Union	\$88,117.33	\$2,175
Reeder	287,102.69	2,864
Pioneer	83,199.10	1,280
Riverside	22,921.15	1,695
Quilna	7,581.16	144
[Totals]	[\$488,921.43]	[\$8,158]

Total of Real Estate and Personal: \$497,169.13 [\$497,079.43]

In 1869, Wexford County had been organized with Missaukee County attached. A tax had been spread on some lands in Missaukee County in 1869 and 1870. On July 4<sup>th</sup> [1871], the Board of Supervisors met at the home of James White of Quilna, and went from there to Sherman, then the County Seat of Wexford county. In the party [were] Supervisors James White, John Vogel, Wm. Morey, and Dan Reeder, and Treasurer Washington Reeder. The settlement showed Wexford County owed Missaukee \$43.85, which was paid.

In October 1871, it was voted to pay the Sherriff a salary of \$100 per year. Prior to that, he received only fees, if any. [Also in October 1871,] Northern<sup>68</sup> supervisors opposed southern on choice of official [county news]paper, and the North won, the award going to the *Grand Traverse Herald*, three votes to two.

#### [1872]

At the session of the Supervisors in January 1872, a Board of Superintendents of the Poor was named. First incumbents were Otto Herweyer, Ira Van Meter, and M.D. Richardson.

At another meeting in March of the same year, what is now Bloomfield was detached from Pioneer and made a part of Quilna. After the spring election of 1872, the new board was composed of B.C. Bonnell of Pioneer; Thomas F Caldwell of Quilna; John Vogel of Clam Union; Wm. H. Cavanagh of Riverside, and Daniel Reeder of Reeder. The latter was chosen chairman.

Surveys for new state roads were under way. One was known as the Manistee and Tawas, near the present route of M55, and another as the Ionia & Houghton Lake, but the latter branched off and continued on into Norwich, where it met what was later called the Fife Lake Road. (At this point, I, F.C.H., wish to say that the Ionia & Houghton Lake Road actually made a junction with—what if not then actually made, was known as the Midland to Traverse City State Road—the junction being at what in 1964 and for many years has been known as Reedsburg. And the Midland to Traverse City State Road did go via Houghton Lake, Fife Lake, Mayfield, etc.).

At this April [1872] session of the board, the name of Quilna was changed to Caldwell [presumably in the name of the newly elected township Supervisor].

The first general election [that included federal and state issues] was held in the fall of 1872, the [US Presidential Ulysses S.] Grant [vs. Horace] Greely campaign. Grant received 111 votes, and Greeley 8. For county offices, Probate Judge Vogel was re-elected without opposition; as was also Otto Schaap for Sherriff. For Clerk and Register, M. D. Richardson defeated E.W. Watson 84 to 49. For Treasurer, Washington Reeder defeated James Cavanaugh, 76 to 58. Arlington C. Lewis, having been licensed to practice law, was chosen Prosecuting Attorney. B.C. Bonnell was elected surveyor; Thomas T. Caldwell and Addison R. Smith were elected Coroners.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>68</sup> Was transcribed by Hirzel as "North and (copied as typed)," an apparent typographical error.

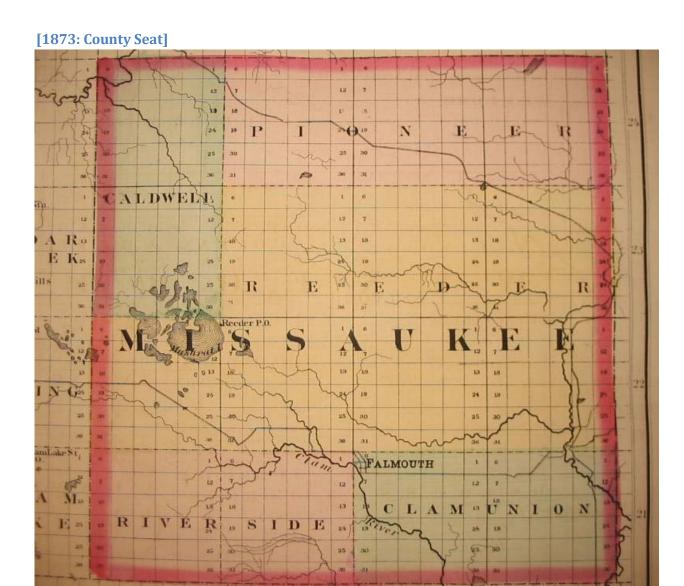


Figure 4: Missaukee County circa 1873

In June 1873, as directed by the Legislature, an election was held to determine the county seat. What is now Lake City, then called Reeder, won, 131 to 95. This is the only vote on the county seat ever held in the county. Most of our neighboring counties later had some hot county seat fights, some lasting for years. Even this one left some sore spots that were not forgotten for a long time. Each side accused the other of "colonizing" voters and probably both indulged in it to some extent. It was never denied that several men were guests of the Reeders about that time, and hunted and fished for a couple of weeks. Some of them became permanent residents, but others moved on, so perhaps they were just prospecting for a location.

The first meeting of the Board of Supervisors at Lake City was held in October 1873. [Commissioned in 1871,] A small two story building, about 16 x 26 was built for a court house, across the street to the west

of the present [1917] county building, with two small offices for the clerk and treasurer downstairs, and a court room upstairs.

In January 1876, it was voted to build a jail at a cost of not over \$500. In April, it was agreed to change the plan and make it two stories, the upper floor to furnish living rooms for the sheriff. A contract at \$897 was let and the building was erected that summer. That jail could hardly be duplicated now for five times the price paid. The outer walls of the lower story were built of 2 x 6 planks laid flat, one on top of the other and spiked solidly together. Two cells were made and the partitions were made of 2 x 4s, laid flat and spiked. When the building burned down in 1888, it made a very hot fire, lasting for hours, and came very near causing the destruction of the courthouse, which was not over twenty feet distant.

In January 1877, the township of Richland was organized. Abraham Stout was the first Supervisor. In April 1877, Forest Township asked to be set as a township. It was opposed by the townships of Reeder, Pioneer, and Caldwell, but the other four Supervisors voted favorably and it was admitted. Henry Nowlin was the first Supervisor.

#### [1877: **State Roads**]

In April 1877, it was recorded in the Lake City Journal that the "Tawas City and Manistee" state road was under construction, and it was known locally as the "Mare's Tail." The name was said to have been coined by a local wit to indicate that the corduroy being placed was only weeds and brush in many places, and "Mare's Tail" was the local name of a weed that grew plentifully along the route.

When "State Road" appears in this story of early days in Missaukee, it must be understood that something very different from what we now, today, know as a "State Road" is [meant; roads now are] very different than then. The "State Road" of that day was usually a trail that wound around swamps and hills to reach its destination, seeking the driest available route through a country that was much wetter than present residents could possibly imagine as ever having existed here. The trail so made was only the width of a wagon track in most places, and no grading, as we know grading, was attempted. The ground was leveled off roughly, enough to permit a wagon to get over it without unsettling. Wet places were "corduroyed" with logs 8 or 10 feet long, and of varying sizes. Later, in some cases, dirt was placed on the logs, but at first that was too much luxury to expect. Usually the timber [growing along the side of the road] was either untouched, or merely cut away wide enough to permit a wagon to pass. Later on, some of these state roads were required to have the timber cut away for two rods wide and a twelve-foot grade made, but most of them were built as above indicated. The old state road from Falmouth to Stittsville is probably the only one in the county that was cleared out and placed on a Section Line. All others in the county wound and twisted around swamps, hills, and even large trees to reach their destination.

They were called "State Roads" because they were built by the state, and paid for in what was known as "state swamp land script." This script was redeemed by the state only when offered in payment (for) what was known as "state swamp land." When the original survey was made, the surveyor marked on his maps all the swamps encountered by him in running the lines, and all the land touched by the swamps so marked became "state swamp land," no matter whether the swamp covered one acre or

forty acres. Every forty-acre description so touched became "state swamp land" and could be bought with the script at the standard price of \$1.25 per acre, without regard to the character of the timber, soil, or location. Consequently, the script had a value, as much of this land had only a little swamp on it and the rest might be covered with valuable timber, or it might be good farming land. And [so,] it was in fair demand for speculators in timber lands. But it usually brought only 70 to 80% of its face value in cash, and as the contractor who took a state road job had to allow for that in bidding. There was much friction between these contractors and parties interested in having the roads built. This "Mare's Tail" was a source of trouble for many years after this.

At this time, April 1877, the village previously having been known as Reeder received the name Lake City. It received mail once a week by stage from Fife Lake. In this same month of April, the stage had difficulty getting through because of fire, and reported driving through a blazing strip half a mile wide. The stage was damaged but got through and saved the mail. Some months later, the mail service was switched to Cadillac, then known as Clam Lake.

#### [Logging]

The summer of 1875 was dry, and apparently the previous year [1874] had lacked moisture also, as it was reported that a "drive" of logs was still hung up in "The Cut" between Higgins and Houghton lakes; for the second summer it had been unable to reach the latter lake. Watson Brothers appeared to be the operators near Lake City, and they reported having 75 to 80 million feet of logs in the West Branch of the Muskegon River, and also [a] big drive in the Butterfield; and thereby hangs a tale.



To present day residents of the county, it may be necessary to explain a "drive." During the winter months, logs were cut, hauled, and piled on the banks of the streams until the spring breakup, when the "rollways," which were piles of logs on the river banks, were "broken," the logs [were] set afloat and "driven" to market. When snowfall and rainfall in winter and spring months was light, it often happened that there was not

enough water in the streams to float the logs, and the drives were "hung up". This happened on the Butterfield creek in the spring of 1877. To relieve this drive, the Watsons sought water from Muskrat Lake [now called Lake Missaukee, the lake for which Lake City gets its name], and entered into a contract with William Reeder for permission to cut a ditch or canal through his land from the lake, at a point near what is now known locally as "Sunset" corners, traces of which can still be seen (in 1917). The contract provided that he should not lower the water in Muskrat Lake more than ten inches below the then level, which was marked. Opposition arose and the town board of Reeder Township notified the Federal authorities, and a U.S. Marshall arrived with an injunction, only about 48 hours before it was

planned to let the water in the ditch. This ditch intersected a water course across the farm now owned by Lloyd Ardis, near the east corporate line, which is the headwaters of the west branch of the Butterfield creek. Drives on the Dead Stream and Clam River were hung up, as well as on the Butterfield. None of them got out that year.

Watson Brothers boasted 12 miles of logging railroad with two locomotives at that time. Paul Lux had a

tram road three miles long, ending at the West Branch River. It is said that the first logging railroad with a real locomotive was built by Thomas Stimson, in Holland Township. These early railroads used plank for rails, with in some cases strap iron spiked to the planks for the wheels to run on. Sometimes the strap iron pulled loose from the plank and curled up at the ends so as to catch the cars with unpleasant results. Other tram roads were operated with oxen for the motive power.





(At this point, I, Fred C. Hirzel, wish to here note that since Mr. George Stout wrote this history in the year 1917, there has been [an article] published in Michigan History Magazine, published by [the] Historical Society of Michigan, December 1952, Volume 36, Number 4, Page 351. In [this] article by Wm. C. Rector, he writes of Winfield Scott Gerrish's Lake George & Muskegon River railroad, [circa] in 1877, and of which some writers have said this was the first strictly logging railroad

in the world. A metal plaque has been erected near Lake George, in Clare County, claiming this to have been the first logging railroad. And while it was probably the very best and most thoroughly practical, Mr. Rector says it was not the first, since as he said, "a quarter of a century earlier there had been a wooden rail, steam logging railroad in New York state." Mr. Rector writes of some other steam-operated logging railroads in "the south" and even in northern, lower Michigan, in the late [18]70s. And the Cadillac Evening News carries some items [and] indications that Ephraim Shay was hauling logs on a mile and a half wooden railroad in Herring Township of Wexford County as early as 1876. It does seem quite unlikely that anyone really knows who or when railroads built strictly for logging purposes were conceived.)

(Continuing with Mr. Stout's history.)

#### [Jail]

It was boasted in June 1877 that the county had a jail a year old but had never had a prisoner in it, and that the county had never had a saloon. It was explained that Ira Van Meter took out a license for his

Falmouth hotel the previous summer, but had probably not used it and did not have it renewed when it expired.

In August [1877], the jail got its first prisoner. Calvin French of Pioneer was arrested, charged with assault with intent to kill his wife and step-daughter [Vera Johnson]. French was a pint-sized man, weighing about 90 pounds, while his wife and step-daughter were both heavier and more active. It appeared they had a row, and French at least threatened them with an axe. The jury found him guilty of assault and battery, and he served four months in jail.<sup>69</sup>

The winter of 1877-78 was a mild one, with very little snow—not enough for sleighing, and not very cold weather. Spring seeding began the first week of April—not a good winter for lumbering. This combination was the present method of moving logs to market, instead of depending upon the rivers, and their use was soon common with all the operators. (This paragraph surely is muddled: I, FCH, suspect that some person, copying Mr. Stout's story may have left out a considerable number of words which may have told of the advent of railroad logging, which began in 1877 on iron rails but a bit earlier on wood rails. This method of moving logs, either direct to saw mills, or at least to the larger rivers, while not eliminating the use of smaller streams, did lessen the need of the smaller streams for which water was often too little.)<sup>70</sup>

# [1880s]

#### [1880]

In the spring of 1880 occurred the wholesale slaughter and the wiping out of the wild pigeons in this section. That year, the woods were crowded with them. They were shot, clubbed from their roosts, netted, and slaughtered in every conceivable manner, until their extermination proved complete. It was the last time they appeared in great numbers.

A mail stage now ran twice a week from Cadillac to Lake City, but the roads still left much to be desired. No one had yet proposed grading up a road so the water would drain away quickly, still less of putting a surface of gravel on top. Concrete and asphalt were still undreamed of.<sup>71</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>69</sup> Some details can be found in Note Book 6 of the Hirzel collection. French apparently beat his wife with a double-bitted axe, mostly using the flat side but cutting her some. Step-daughter Vera Johnson was "desperately wounded, with great cuts in her head and arms." After the row, French "went to Moreys after whiskey." The Jury convicted him in 12 minutes, but only of assault and battery. This was the first jury trial in the Circuit Court of Missaukee. He was released 13 March 1878 according to the Lake City *Journal*.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>70</sup> The paragraph is muddled in the original version typed and published by the Missaukee Historical Society as well.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>71</sup> Stout's history originally included the following paragraph, but since it was oddly placed here and out of chronological order within his monograph, and since the paragraph is now known to be incomplete and erroneous, it has been moved to this footnote. "Dates of some of the early homestead holders may be of interest. In Pioneer, Wm. J Morey and Washington Richardson in 1867; M.D. Richardson in 1868. West Branch, at what is now known as Star City, all on Section 24; R.L. Williams, James Nixon, and N. Putnam, 1872; C.A. Miller and Chancey Brace in 1875. Daniel, Washington, and William Reeder, all in 1868, and John Howe, 1872." See Koster, Steven, "The Earliest Settlers of Missaukee County" 2016 for a more accurate list of names and dates. See "United States Bureau of Land Management Tract Books, 1800-c. 1955," for original homesteading documentation.

Up to this time, 1880, the county had two residents that had been licensed to practice law—A.C. Lewis and M.D. Richardson, neither of whom ever seriously practiced, although both of them held the office of prosecuting attorney in early days. In 1880, two attorneys located here—Horace N. McIntyre and S.W. Skeels. They proved not greatly different from their predecessors. McIntyre served one term as prosecuting attorney, but soon turned to other sources of making money. Skeels returned to his former occupation of teaching school.

#### [Census]

The census of 1880 gave [these counts of residents:]

- Clam Union 402
- Riverside 152
- Richland 76
- West Branch 63

- Forest 51
- Pioneer 299
- Caldwell 104
- Reeder 322

 Total 1554, a gain of 948 in six years.

#### [Liquor]

In the fall of 1880, Sylvester (Vet) Stevens, [of] Lake City, was building an addition to a frame building previously built for a dwelling--where the Ford Garage now stands [in 1917]—which became the Northern Hotel. Both he and John Armstrong, then landlords of the Lake City Hotel, where the present hotel of the same name now stands, took out licenses for the legal sale of liquor, save the one exception previously here noted.

Prior to this there had been at least one attempt to sell liquor in Lake City. Alex McLennan, better known as "Mack", purchased a small barrel of whiskey and a keg a beer. Reaching Lake City near nightfall, he deposited what was to be his stock in trade that he had intended to offer to the public the next day, in a small building he had secured, near the corner of Main and John streets. In the morning, his stock had disappeared, and all attempts to recover it or [to] locate the thieves were unsuccessful. This happened in the late summer or early fall. What became of the whiskey is not known, but the beer reappeared later. During a session of the Board of Supervisors in April 1881, Wm. Minthorn was piling up a quantity of stove wood which he had cut and hauled the previous winter, and thrown it loosely on a vacant lot, corner of Canal and Prospect streets, in full view of the court house, when Marion D. Richardson, then prosecuting attorney, acting on a tip from someone, went over and helped Minthorn in what seemed to be a big job. Richardson worked industriously for a few minutes, and shortly announced he found something, and uncovered the missing keg of beer, which was taken to a convenient spot and consumed by the supervisors, county officials, and anyone who happened along. That ended Mack's attempt to open a saloon, as his stock in trade had disappeared, and he lacked credit or cash to replenish it. An echo of this returned for several years, each time the supervisors met. Acting on someone's advice, Mack, [at] each session, presented a bill for one keg of beer, but never received any compensation.

At the October 1879 session of the Supervisors, a petition for organization of the east half of Clam Union (now Holland) was presented. Action was postponed until January [1880] and then denied. In January 1880, Bloomfield asked admission and it was granted. First Supervisor [was] Minot Shippy.

In April 1880, the supervisors appointed a committee to select a suitable farm for a county farm and report at the next meeting. Committee [included] C.L. Ostander of Reeder, Shippy of Bloomfield, and Koopman of Clam Union. They reported in October [1880], recommended the purchase of the Perley farm on Section 32, Aetna, where the first meeting of supervisors was held [back in 1871]. In January [1881], the supervisors authorized purchase at a price not to exceed \$2500. Apparently this was not accepted and the purchase was not made.

In October 1880, Aetna was admitted as a township, with Butterfield included as a part of it. R.J. Porter was the first supervisor. At the same session, Norwich was admitted with the same area of two surveyed townships, as it still has. John Stitt was the first supervisor.

#### [1881]

#### [Bradford Township]

At the April session of 1881, F.L. Decker made his first appearance as a supervisor, coming from Forest. This was his first entrance into Missaukee politics; and he remained a conspicuous figure for many years.

At this [April 1881] session, P.H. McCracken appeared and was seated as the Supervisor of Bradford Township, composed of the east half of Clam Union [now Holland township]. The board of supervisors had refused to organize the township, and it apparently was organized through some action in the courts. Its history as a township [named Bradford] was short but sensational.

At the session in January 1882, no supervisor appeared for Bradford, and no tax roll was in evidence. The supervisors ordered the Sherriff to go to Bradford, get the tax roll and investigate conditions. He returned with the roll and other papers. Something appeared to be wrong, and Supervisors Gregson of Richland, W.H. Cavanagh of Riverside, and Shippy of Bloomfield were appointed a committee to investigate. To this committee F.L. Decker was added later. The committee reported that they found the assessment roll was not completed; [the] supervisor and clerk had disappeared and with them went about \$1200 belonging to the township, and the town board was left without a quorum.

A warrant was issued for the arrest of supervisor McCracken, and he was found in Petersburg, Virginia by Sherriff Lafayette Charter. He opposed being brought back and was extradited, tried in Lake City, and acquitted on a legal point. It appeared that the money, which came from Clam Union Township on the settlement with the new town, was turned over to him without legal authority. It should have been paid to the Treasurer of Bradford, but on settlement day, that officer did not appear, and the Treasurer of Clam Union, who had drawn the money from a bank miles away for the purpose of paying it over, wanted to get rid of the currency, and turned it over to Supervisor McCracken to deliver to the Treasurer. This failure to deliver the money was termed a "breach of trust" and not a theft under the law as it stood at that time. The money could only be recovered by a civil suit.

About the same time, S.B. Ardis of Lake City lost \$400 in the same way. He asked a friend to get from the express office in Cadillac a package containing \$400 in currency and bring it to him. His "friend" got the money and kept it, leaving the country promptly. The next legislature passed a new law, making "breaches of trust" criminal acts.

To resume the Bradford story: In April 1882, John Creith appeared as Supervisor from Bradford and was seated. No one appeared from Bradford at the June session. In October, no supervisor from Bradford appeared. The Sherriff was sent after Creith and the assessment roll. He returned without either. The matter was referred to the Prosecuting Attorney, who reported that it was too late to make an assessment of Bradford. The Sherriff was sent back to make further search, but without any results of interest. No taxes had been spread and the township surrendered its organization.

#### [Logging]

Logs banked along the rivers as reported in April 1st [1882] were:

- Clam River, 38 Million
- West Branch, 31 Million
- Manistee, 20 Million
- West Branch of the Clam, 8.5 Million
- Butterfield, 9 Million
- Muskegon, 4 Million
- Muskrat lake, 350,000 ft
- Total for the county: 110,365,000 [110,850,000]

Logging by rail grew rapidly following the mild winters of 1877-78-79. According to figures compiled by the *Lake City Journal*, the yearly totals from 102 to 122 million feet yearly up to and including the winter of 1881-1882. Names of the harvest operators in the last years included:

- Clam River: McGraft & Montgomery, Cody & Moore, D.A. Blodgett, J.W. Weaver, Dick Miller, Shelvin Davis & Company, Torrent & Ducey, and Tom Stimson, each credited with more than a million feet.
- Butterfield: Shelvin Davis & Co., Haymarsh Creek, Col. Fuller, each with a million at least
- West Branch of Muskegon River: Paul Lux, Wm. Coach, J.H. Moores, White & Swan & Smith, and J.L. White with a total of 18,525,000 for that stream
- Muskrat lake, for local consumption mostly: Dan and William Reeder, James Dyer, John Armstrong and others, 937,000
- Manistee River: N. Taber & Sons, Charles Maryhinson, Bowen, Dempsey, Stronach Lumber Co.,
- West Branch of the Clam River: Torrent & Ducey, John Ryan, and others.
- Dead Stream: E & C Eldred, Blodgett & Byrne, Bigelow Brothers, George Newcomb
- Muskegon River: Charley Marsh, D.A. Blodgett, Wm. F. Seeley, Farr & Co., S.C. Hall, Torrent & Ducey, L.D. Gleason

#### [Courthouse]

In 1881, a small building fund had been accumulated for the purpose of building a court house. A motion to build the following year was defeated. A motion to move the county seat to the center of the county was defeated with a record vote.

In April 1882, supervisor Decker of Forest offered the following resolution: "Resolved, that Missaukee County build a court house on the lots now owned by the county, situated in the village of Lake City; that the cost of said court house shall not exceed ten thousand dollars." [The resolution was] adopted; only A.J. Becker of Aetna, Creith of Bradford, and Vis of Clam Union voting against it. By the same vote, a special election was ordered to be held June 19, 1882, to vote on a bond issue of \$7000. The election was held and the bonds were voted 187 to 137.

A committee to locate the building and grade the grounds was composed of Becker, Caldwell, and Gregson. Daniel Reeder gave the county a deed to the lots selected, where the building now stands [in



Figure 5: Lake City Court House, built 1883, burned in 1944

1917;] (This building burned in February 1943). A building committee composed of Minot Shippy, Thomas T. Caldwell, John Murray (of West Branch) and F.L. Decker was appointed. Next day, Arlington C. Lewis was added to the committee.

The ground was graded in the summer of 1882. Thomas T. Caldwell, supervisor of Caldwell, died that year and Henry H. Long of Reeder succeeded him on the committee. John G. Mosser of Cadillac was the contractor. The building was erected in 1882, the committee making final report at the January 1883 session. (I, F.C.H., noting that Mr. Stout had failed to mention that the plans for that courthouse and also the Presbyterian Church were drawn by George Nelson of Norwich Township. I here record that which appeared at the time in the *Lake City Journal*.)

(Continuing with Mr. Stout's recording.) It (the courthouse) was built nearer to the original estimate than most public buildings. The final figures were:

- Stone for walls \$279.18
- Laying wall \$208
- Plans \$40
- Lettering \$16
- Contract \$7.50
- Surveying grounds \$3
- Paid Contractor \$9447
- Total: \$10,014.88

In October 1882, a petition was filed to organize a township under the name of *Missaukee*. Organization was granted, but the name was changed to *Lake*.

At this October session of the supervisors, the questions of a county poor farm came up again, after having been ignored for several years. A committee be appointed to negotiate a purchase, but the report was tabled.

In April 1883, John Murray and Chas. Miller both appeared, each claiming to be the supervisor from West Branch. Miller had a certificate of election from the election inspectors, and Murray one from the township clerk. A motion to accept the report of the election inspectors' certificate was carried once, then reconsidered. Finally, the certificate of the clerk was accepted, and Murray was seated. But at the next session of the board, Sylvanus Siddal appeared in his stead, having been appointed by the town board.

## [Jagt Murders]

At a special session of the supervisors in March 1884, they appropriated \$1000 for investigation of the murder of an old couple named Jagt, who had been killed and their home near Vogel Center burned to conceal evidence of the crime. After many delays and a sensational trial, a man named Arnold, who ran a small hotel at Vogel Center, was convicted of the crime. The Jagts were supposed to have kept several hundred dollars in their home. Arnold died many years later, protesting his innocence, and many people doubted if the right man had gone to prison.

# [1884]

# [County Farm]

In the spring of 1884, a committee to secure prices and terms for a county farm was appointed, composed of supervisors Porter, Shippy, and Sidal. In October [1884] the committee reported, recommending that as first choice the John Breem farm in Forest [be purchased] at \$2000, [and as a] second choice, C.L. Ostrander and Thos. Howe's farms in Reeder [be purchased] at \$3400. [Instead,] A new committee was appointed. James Cavanagh and George Wood joined in recommending as first choice the Doyle farm of Wm. Doyle in Reeder Township (now part of the Potato Experimental farm). As a second choice, [they recommended] the present farm, then owned by M. Vanarsdale and Wm. Hayes, priced at \$2500. M.D. Richardson submitted a minority report recommending the farm in Pioneer then owned by B.C. Bonnell, [and] later by Louis F. Pitz. The board turned down the Doyle and Bonnell farms, and purchased the present farm.

In the summer of 1884, a new law firm, McClear & Gaffney, located in Lake City. McClear served one term as prosecuting attorney, then the firm dissolved and McClear went to the Upper Peninsula. Gaffney stayed and became one of the prominent figures in Lake City and Missaukee County business and political life for many years, until he removed to Cadillac in 1910, and then still retained many interests here. He served Lake City as its president twelve times and [for] four terms as prosecuting attorney. And this in a county that was heavily Republican while he was a Democrat. He won a reputation as an attorney and was recognized as one of the best in Northern Michigan.

# [Newspapers]

[Also] in the summer of 1884, H.N. McIntyre started a second newspaper in Lake City in opposition to Barker's *Journal*. Early the next spring [of 1885], fire destroyed the newspaper office and much of its plant. McIntyre bought the *Journal* and consolidated the two, changing the name to the *New Era*. In 1887, the *Plain Dealer* and the *Republican* were both launched as new papers. The *Republican* and the *New Era* consolidated not long after, dropping the name *New Era*. The *Plain Dealer* (first called the *Independent*) continued for nearly fifty years, and was then sold and consolidated with the *Republican*.<sup>72</sup>

(At this point, I, F.C. Hirzel, wish to say that I have read and otherwise browsed through many volumes of the *Lake City Journal*, *Plain Dealer*, and *Republican* at irregular intervals beginning in about 1945 to last December, 1963. I have never seen a copy of the New *Era* except as taken off the walls in an old house which I was wrecking in about 1945. [I saw] portions of three copies of that paper which were published, I believe, in about 1884. The fire at the *New Era* probably accounts for the missing files, which no doubt contained a lot of history of Lake City and Missaukee County, which now is for all time lost.)

## [1885-1886]

At the October session of the supervisors in 1885, George W. Moore, supervisor of Reeder, called attention to the need for a new jail. No action was taken then, but in January following it was agreed to submit the question of bonding for \$5000 for a new jail. Vote resulted was Yes 462, No 291. Forest was

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>72</sup> George Stout himself was behind the *Plain Dealer*. For more detail on newspaper history, see <a href="http://michigannewspaperhistory.pbworks.com/w/page/20854492/Missaukee%20County">http://michigannewspaperhistory.pbworks.com/w/page/20854492/Missaukee%20County</a>

the only one to vote heavily against it. In June [1886], a building committee was named, consisting of Porter, Moore, and Doyle of Caldwell. Contract was let to George E. Nelson. Total cost of the building [was] about \$6000.

[In June 1886, Milon Brass was murdered in his Norwich home by his wife and her lover, who fled to Petoskev.]<sup>73</sup>

Lake City was incorporated as a village in the winter of 1886-1887 by the supervisors. A.C. Lewis was the first president.

### [1887]

In April 1887, the superintendents of the poor urged the need for a new building on the [Poor] farm. Action [was] delayed for financial reasons. In October, a motion to raise \$2000 for a new building lost.

# [Lumbering Struggles]

In 1887, it was noted that the Haymarsh [lumber] drive went out (that is, it reached the Muskegon River) about May 1<sup>st</sup>. That was earlier than usual. The Clam got out about June 1<sup>st</sup>. Thayer Lumber Company had logs in Muskrat Lake that spring, which they rafted across the lake and had then loaded at "the slide" by Cody & Moore, and hauled to the Clam River.

(At this point, since Mr. Stout has already several times mentioned the getting "out" of the log drives, and since I have been pretty well briefed on some of the parlance of river men and lumbermen on the meaning of getting drives "out", and the possible consequences if they were not got out, I feel that some further information may be appreciated. I have received my information from such men as Lewis L. Torrent, residing in Muskegon, the only son left living of any of the big timber barons, whose father was John Torrent. Also, I have been advised by Mr. William J. Brinen, now several years dead. All big lumber companies stated in their contracts with logging contractors--such as Cody & Moore, Watson Brothers, Dick Miller, Paul Lux, only to name a few—[that] they not only had to see the logs rolled into the smaller river and streams, but they must [also] see them safely afloat in the main Muskegon River, and Manistee [River], etc. From there on, a company known as a booming company took over and got the logs to the mills at Muskegon, etc. The stockholders of the booming company were made up of the large timber owners. The booming company which was known as the Muskegon Booming Company charged each lumberman whose logs they handled a set price per thousand feet of timber the booming company delivered to the mills.

A case where failure to get the logs into the main Muskegon River resulted disastrously to the Watson Brothers of near Falmouth in about the year 1887 was related to me about two years ago by one Mr. Koopman still living in Falmouth. This man is a son of Mr. John Koopman, who owned a grist mill, saw mill, and creamery at Falmouth, powered by water from Mr. Koopman's dam on the Clam River at that place.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>73</sup> Details are in Note Book 6 of the Hirzel collection, but the story is too long to recount here. Maybe a future edition will include it.

And incidentally, Mr. Koopman had a great deal of trouble with lumbermen holding back floods, which when released damaged Mr. Koopman's dam. Mr. Koopman won in a court case and D.A. Blodgett had to pay Koopman a sum of money to defer his milling business for a term of years, until the lumberman could get his logs through to the river.

Now, [to continue] the story of the Watson Brothers, [they] were operating 12 miles of railroad which used wooden rails but was powered by two steam locomotives. It seems that a large lumberman gave a contract to the Watsons to harvest, and put into the Clam River, and to get into the Muskegon and "OUT" a large acreage of timber, work that would take several years to accomplish. The main trouble was that the big timber owner had overlooked the fact that he, or they as the case may have been, might be for some reason confronted with the necessity of curtailing logging or of stopping it for a time altogether.

This very thing happened when the lumber market became glutted with too much timber and what we know as "hard-times" (later called a "depression") struck the lumbermen. They tried to get the Watsons to stop logging for a while, but they refused to do so, continuing to put logs into the rivers as fast as ever. So long as the Watsons could get their drives "out", the timber owners had to saw them into lumber and pile it up, pay insurance on it when they couldn't sell it at a profit.

Finally, Watsons, with millions of feet of logs on the banks of streams and small rivers, and winters of little snow and scarcity of rain, [found] the streams would not float them and the logs were "hung up" two years in succession. Watson had put the logs in against the wishes of the owners. Watsons [were] unable to get them "out," [and] the owners of the logs--[logs] which were completely destroyed by rot-sued the Watson Brothers and completely ruined them. Not willing to stop logging for perhaps a year or two, and then not being able to get the "drive out," was the undoing of the Watsons. The importance of getting "drives out" will now be taken up by resuming with Mr. Stout's story after his mentioning [the] Thayer Lumber Company's logs being loaded out of Muskrat Lake at the "slide" by Cody & Moore, who hauled them with their train to the Clam River. F.C.H.)



Figure 6: An ML&CL locomotive, the DM Moore

Some time prior to this, Cody & Moore, a partnership composed of Larry Cody and George W. Moore, held a contract from certain owners of pine timber mostly in Reeder Township and vicinity. [They] had built a logging railroad from Muskrat Lake, as it was still called, to the Clam River at a point known as the wide water, a couple miles upstream from Falmouth. Timber near the lake was cut and sleigh-hauled and banked on the ice of the lake in winter, and in summer, by means of what was called the "slide"--which was built of logs—were lifted from the water and placed on cars to be hauled to the Clam River. They had timber also east of the lake, and this too went over the railroad to the river.

R.M Bielby and Edward and Matthew Malone drove locomotives that hauled the logs on this road for years. 74

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>74</sup> Here Stout notes "One of these locomotives that hauled the logs can still be seen in Clinch Park in Traverse City." But Hirzel erases the sentence and notes "Thus erased is an error. The [engine] at Clinch Park was originally Port Huron & NW Railroad." In 2014, Steve Zuiderveen of Missaukee has done some additional research on this locomotive and notes the engine once in Clinch Park, known as the *DB Harrington*, was indeed a ML&CL locomotive. Since then, it has also been to the Cedar Point and Lake Erie amusement park railroad, then to the Henry Ford Museum, and then spent some time at a restorationist in Ohio. As of 2014, it is in half-restored storage at the Port Huron Museum (Cf. <a href="http://www.stclairfoundation.org/news/more/db">http://www.stclairfoundation.org/news/more/db</a> harrington). The ML&CL had two locomotives. The other is pictured here loaded with lumber, on the "wide spot" in the Clam River, also known

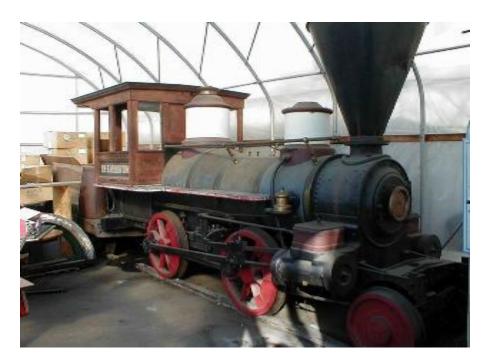


Figure 7: The DB Harrington was built in 1878 and was originally owned by the Port Huron & Northwestern Railroad.

In June 1887, Herbert Fisher, a druggist then in Lake City, purchased 40 acres of land in Caldwell Township and platted North Lake City.

In this same month, the Ann Arbor railroad was being graded through what is now Lucas. It was then operating as far north as Mount Pleasant and reached Cadillac in December following. The village of Owens, now the city of McBain, was platted in September, as was also what is now known as the village of Lucas, at first called Marysville.

It was reported in August [1887] that fire had destroyed the crossway or corduroy across the Clam River swamp, south of Lake City, and the road was closed. It was reopened soon afterward, but for years remained a sample of the worst road in Missaukee County.

Up to this time, eleven hours was a common day's work in sawmills and in most other occupations. A strike was reported at Jennings in the Mitchell mill and yards, asking for a ten-hour day. The request was granted as soon as the news reached the Mitchell office in Cadillac. Labor troubles as we know them now were undreamed of.

The following winter of 1887-1888 brought heavy snows and storms. Three feet of snow on the level was reported in the woods. The Ann Arbor [railroad], just being built, had distributed poles for a telegraph line, intending to complete it during the winter, but in January [they] abandoned it as hopeless, unable to find the poles in the snow. Railroads had plenty of trouble keeping trains moving.

as the Henderson Dam. The ML&CL was also known as Cody & Moore Lumber Co., and it basically followed the ditch line of Burkett Road from the Clam River to Jennings road, and then arced over to the north side of Lake City to the log slide.

# [Fire Protection]

Beginning early in 1887, Lake City people had become aroused to the danger from fire that threatened the town, and began agitating for a water works system. But it was not until June 1888 that Daniel Reeder came to the aid of town and signed a contract to construct and operate a water system.

It was too late to save many citizens from heavy losses. On the night of July 4<sup>th</sup> [1888], fire was discovered under the outside stairway of a building owned and operated as a saloon by Martin Vanarsdale. The village was destitute of fire-fighting equipment of more than [a] purely volunteer pail brigade. The flames spread with little check on them and destroyed the entire business block on the east side of the street. [The fire] took the Grand Central Hotel, a nearly new three-story brick veneered structure, with two or three buildings north of it, besides Washington Reeder's residence south of the hotel across Prospect Street. It also wiped out a small store building [and] a dwelling owned by Washington and William Reeder, on the west side of Main Street, south of Prospect. The water works were completed and put into operation on the 19<sup>th</sup> of July.

While the losses fell heavily on individuals, the town as a whole was benefitted by the fire, since the buildings burned were largely replaced with brick. What were rebuilt as frame structures were burned [again] in another fire, in 1912, so that the whole block became more nearly fireproof and was immensely improved in appearance.

# [1889]

# [Confrontations: Poor farm, robbery, water rights]

In October 1888, the supervisors voted to raise \$1000 towards the cost of a building on the county farm, with the Supervisors keeping control of the money. In April 1889, \$2500 was appropriated for the building and control placed in the hands of a building committee of Supervisors, consisting of Rumsey of Norwich, Danberry of Bloomfield, and Olmstead of Lake. This committee pointedly ignored the Superintendents of the Poor, and this was resented by the latter. The row broke into the open over a certain pile of lumber which the superintendents had in their control, which had been cut from timber on the farm. This lumber the Supervisors told the contractor he could use in building, but the Superintendents saw to it that he didn't get it. Then the Supervisors' committee preferred charges against the Superintendents of the Poor and summoned them to appear for trial before the whole board. The case collapsed when the committee of Supervisors all confessed under cross examination that they had never asked the superintendents for the lumber. Superintendents at this time were C.L. Ostrander, Thomas McManus, and Martin Duffy. The building cost \$2975, plus \$326 for a furnace. The Superintendents then and since have criticized the plans of the building.

What was probably the only "holdup" robbery ever committed in Lake City occurred on May 8<sup>th</sup>, 1889. Owen McGovern, proprietor of the hotel and saloon known as the Northern, had a large safe in the hotel barroom and was known to keep considerable sums of currency there. He had a habit of getting his money out of the safe every night after closing up and counting it under a strong light, in plain view of any passers-by on the street. He had been warned of what might happen and it did. Three men gained entrance through back rooms and attacked without warning, overpowered him, and got away

with what was reported [to amount] to about \$1300. During the struggle, they fired a couple shots to intimidate him, but did little harm otherwise. The thieves were never captured.

In May 1889, trouble flared up over the outlet to Lake Missaukee. Cody and Moore were operating the "slide" camp near the outlet and were hauling logs to the Clam River. George W. Moore, a member of the firm, had [earlier] taken up a residence in Lake City and interested himself in local politics. He seized and opportunity afforded him by swinging his heavy power of his employees for an independent ticket and elected himself supervisor. With this demonstration, the local politicians subsided and he retained the office as long as he wished. This position gave him a chance to keep the town board quiet when he desired, as sometimes happened, to open the outlet and take water to run his drive out of the Clam. For this purpose, the sandy ridge that kept the lake water from flowing into the pond that then formed the headwaters of Mosquito Creek had been cut through and closed again when the need for water had passed.

But now, Lake City had been organized as a village, and the village authorities had succeeded the township board in jurisdiction over the outlet. The village was no doubt feeling its new powers and dignity—and the village officers were not particularly friendly to Mr. Moore anyway. And so, when someone blew out the northern dam with dynamite one night, the villagers were aroused. Under the auspices of the village president Howard Owens and the village council, with the backing and cooperation of the Sherriff, Robert D. Barry, the outlet was closed with timbers and earth. A representative of Hovey & McCracken, owners of [the] timber Cody & Moore were lumbering under contract, appeared and ordered the villagers away, claiming they were trespassing on his land. They advised him to seek a warmer climate. He disappeared, but later a crew of 25 or 20 Finns and Swedes, who could not or would not understand English, appeared, armed with peevies and shovels, expressing by motions their desire to open the outlet. Demonstrations of force and threats of attack caused the foreigners to retire without coming to blows, and an armed guard was set. No further attempt to open it was made that year.

An amusing jail breaking occurred in July [1889]. A horse racing program was in progress at the fairgrounds, and Sherriff Barry, an enthusiastic horseman, was in attendance there. A workman, repairing some plumbing, had been given the keys of the jail, and he dropped them on the floor, not far from a cell door, and had forgotten them. Two prisoners, confined for some misdemeanor, were in the cells. Somehow they got hold of a piece of wire, and after some fishing with it, they secured the key and let themselves out. They went to the fairground and tried to get in at the gate to see the races. The gateman refused them admission, since they had no ticket and no money. So they went around to the back of the grounds and climbed the fence without molestation and watched the races. Just as the last race ended, a messenger notified Sherriff Barry his prisoners were missing. Just then the latter appeared, tendered the keys to the Sherriff, and said they were ready to go back now.

In October [1889], work had begun on a two-story, four-room school building in Lake City, on the site of the present one. The building was erected in 1889, [and] burned in 1904, [which is] when the south two-story section of the present building was built. The first school in the county was held at Vogel Center in

1872. The first school house in Lake City was built in 1873, on the site now occupied by Mrs. D.D. Walton's residence.

In November 1889, it was announced that Louis Sands of Manistee had bought the pine lands in Missaukee County formerly owned by the Grand Rapids & Indiana railroad, and that a mill would be built in Lake City to manufacture the timber, and [that] Lake City would get a standard-gauge railroad.

Sometime around 1884 or 1885, the Cummer Lumber Company of Cadillac had built a narrow-gauge (36-inch) railroad, primarily to haul logs to their mills at Cadillac, to the west shore of Lake Missaukee. They built a dock there, and began to carry passengers and freight which they ferried across the lake on a small steam boat. The following year, the road was completed to Lake City coming around the north side of the lake.

Two passenger trains daily were placed in operation. Service was excellent, better passenger service than Lake City ever got from the Pennsylvania, but of course, at Cadillac the reloading of all freight, both ways, was an extra expense and a handicap to shippers. So the town was anxious for a standard gauge road. Grading for the railroad began on December 10<sup>th</sup>, at the east end of John Street. On April 23<sup>rd</sup>, 1890, the first train over what then was called the Grand Rapids & Indiana railroad reached Lake City.

Local dissention was reported over the high water in Lake Missaukee, some wanting to open the outlet and lower the lake, others opposing it. No definite policy was decided upon.

# [1890s]

### [1890]

The census of 1890 gave the county a population of 5040, and the village 735. The September term of circuit court had 32 cases on the calendar. A surplus of attorneys was just passing, and that might have had something to do with the litigation. F.O. Gaffney had just returned from a year's experiment of practicing in Ionia. Three brothers named Turner (Jerome, Charles, and Willard) and a brother in-law of theirs named Gates, also an attorney, [along] with C.F. Thomas, A.W. Scoville, and C.L. Goll, made up the members of the bar. A.G. Smith came the following year, but the Turners, Gage, Thomas, and Scoville had left before that.

#### [1891]75

In 1891, there was considerable [damage] done by forest fires, not only in this county, but in many others, especially in Clare and Osceola, where trains were delayed several times.

A new law created the office of School Commissioner, and the Supervisors appointed Georgia Roche as the first commissioner. Previously, there had been an officer known as the secretary of the board of school examiners, with duties similar to that of the new office, but considerable added duties and power was given the new officer.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>75</sup> George Stout authored another history of Missaukee, called *The Story of a Year in Missaukee County*. It details the day-to-day events in Missaukee throughout the year 1891.

Mitchell Brothers, [a] lumber yard in Jennings, burned and the village was threatened, but saved by favoring winds. Loss estimated at \$200,000.

The winter of 1891-1892<sup>76</sup> was mild, and practically no ice formed on lakes and streams south of this county. Grand Rapids Ice companies purchased and rented lake frontage, cut, shipped, and stored ice from Lake Missaukee. The business continued for several years until the manufacture of artificial ice caught up with the demand.

# [1892]

In June [1892?], Edd Lapham built a sawmill with a capacity of 40,000 feet per day, and began operations at what is now known as Sunset Corners, where the Watson Brothers had earlier tried to tap Muskrat Lake to get water to float a drive down the Butterfield. The G.R. & I. built a [rail] branch east to near the Ellis Hill, to supply logs to the new mill. This branch was later extended to Falmouth.

1892 again brought forest fires that many times threatened damage. A train on Sands' logging road had a thrilling experience. With James Flynn as engineer and Jos. Middleton as fireman, they found themselves cut off by fire. The engineer decided to take a chance and run through the flames; [he] opened the throttle and let it go. Unfortunately, a tree had fallen across the track, derailing the engine and train. Engineer and fireman were thrown clear. Middleton was bruised and burned considerably, but Flynn escaped unhurt.

There were four teachers in the Lake City School in 1892, and the wages paid may interest present teachers. C.L. Goll, the Principal, received \$65 per month for nine months, and each of the others received \$40 per month. Other teachers in the county were at least not paid more than those figures on the average.

#### [1893]

In 1893, agitation began advocating placing the county under the newly authorized county road system. First mention of a snow plow in Lake City was made in a newspaper, but it was built of wood and drawn by oxen.

The winter of 1892-1893 brought deep snow and drifts. In March [1893], residents of Jennings had to drive by way of Lake City to reach Cadillac. The road from Jennings to Lake City then came around the north side of the two lakes and was well protected by timber from drifts. The road from Lake City to Cadillac ran through timber not yet cut over, for the most part, while the road from Jennings to Cadillac was across cut-over land and drifts were high.<sup>77</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>76</sup> Transcribed by Hirzel as 1892-03, but that makes little sense. Given the context, 1891-1892 seems to be the intent. Since Mr. Stout is not always chronological in his listing of stories, it could be 1892-1893, but he references that winter separately below, and describes it as having deep snow.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>77</sup> Mr. Hirzel notes here on his formatting: (At this point I leave the remainder of this page blank, since I had previously typed Mr. Stout's history from the point where I left off just above this. The four pages previously typed and double spaced will now be renumbered as 18, 19, 20, and 21)(Beginning next with the story of the Sands camp fire. F.C. Hirzel.)

In 1893, McBain was incorporated as a village. Gillis McBain was the first president.

Water in Missaukee was high, and continued to rise through April and May. All the smaller lakes north and west were spilling over their banks and draining into Lake Missaukee. Water was threatening to put out the fires in the boiler room at the water works. And at Sands' mill, cellars on Main Street were filling with water, and the village council was appealed to for some action. The village attorney informed the council that [their] body had power to declare a water nuisance and open the outlet, but it had no power to spend money for the building of a closed fume or covered drain to carry the water through Sands' lumber yard, and Sands refused to allow the open channel for water across his property. Daniel Reeder began suit against Sands, claiming damages from the high water and alleging that there had been an open stream from the outlet for years until Sands filled up the channel. Louis Sands and the council finally reached an agreement, [with] Sands furnishing the lumber under the railroad and permitting an open ditch elsewhere.

# [Sands' camp forest fire tragedy]

On Saturday, May 20, 1893 occurred the worst forest fire tragedy in the history of the county, when ten employees of the Sands Lumber Company lost their lives. What was known as Sands Camp 4, situated near the south line of Section 11, Forest Township, and fifty or sixty rods east of the west line, burned. The southwest quarter of this section had been cut over during the preceding winter, and the tops of branches of pine trees nearly covered the ground. These were now dry, full of pitch, and burned rapidly. A forest fire had been burning over cutover lands north and west of this section, but no attention was paid to it as it was nothing new and rarely endangered life or property. On this particular day, a high wind sprang up and fanned the flames, which bore down on the doomed camp, at a speed as fast as a horse would travel. The logging railroad track passed close to the camp shanties, and an engine and train of cars being loaded with logs was east of the camp. When the fire came, the train and most of the crew took refuge in the uncut timber, east of the camp. Fire would not run far in standing timber. From accounts of the survivors, a local reporter compiled the following account of what followed.

To understand the situation of the men, the location of the camp must be borne in mind. It stood beside the railroad, well to the west side of section line 11. To the north was a strip of nearly half a mile wide country covered with pine tops which burn like powder when dry, as these were. On the east it was about the same. On the south it varied in width, but averaged less than on the north and east. On the west it was about forty rods wide, ending at the wagon road. West on the wagon road was the old cutting which had been burned over before and had little fuel left to feed a fire. On this side, most of those got out who escaped from the fire zone, although fire came from this direction.

After dinner Saturday, the men started to work as usual, the fire being then some distance to the northwest. Before all of [them] had got to their work, foreman Campbell called some of them back to help fight the fire. The fight was soon seen to be a hopeless one, and some proceeded to save property. Of these, every one died while trying to do what they thought was their duty.

Edward Sullivan, a man with a wooden leg, took the alarm about this time, and draping himself with a wet horse blanket, he started west. He doesn't know, but he probably followed the railroad. He fell

several times, was burned considerably, but reached the wagon road and safety. He saw Mulholland fall behind him, but was unable to help him. David Rubel escaped by way of the railroad, and also saw Mulholland fall. Had he known that safety was as near as it proved to be, he might have saved the other man. When Sullivan left camp, he met foreman Campbell and asked him to come along, but the latter said no, he was going to save the books. A man named Cleveland mounted one of a team of horses, made a run for it and escaped. He was probably the last man to see any of the dead men alive. He invited Campbell to mount the other horse, but Campbell said he preferred taking [his] chances in the well.

From what remains of the root cellar and the well, it is believed that four and perhaps six of the victims took refuge in the root cellar, and then, driven from there by the heat and smoke, in desperation jumped into the well. Two others were already there, thinking to escape in that way. The well was an open one, about 25 feet deep altogether, and with about three feet above the surface, and had a roof and pulley at the top. When the whole eight who were found there got in, they were packed in like sardines. One was under foot of the rest, and the other seven were all out of water except their legs. It was believed they died of suffocation, and that the burning well roof and upper curbing had fallen in on them.

Besides those found in the well, Mike Mulholland, teamster, was found west of the camp, near the wagon road. Another man, Edward Rorabacher, fled east. His body, nearly consumed, was about eighty rods east of the camp, about half way to safety. The eight in the well were:

- Samuel Campbell, foreman, lived in Cadillac with his mother, unmarried
- Fred Sager, sawyer, father and brothers near Howard City
- Hans Jacobsen, a Dane, camp blacksmith, with his wife and two children lived in Sandstown (Since then within the corporate limits of Lake City)
- Frank Sandgren, choreboy, little known about him
- Mike Gagen, filer, has a sister in Naple Valley
- Charles Taylor, cook, lived in Cadillac, married
- James Hugh, outside choreboy, Mother at Elk Rapids
- John Hill, swamper, been in USA about a year, family in Finland
- Rorabacher was the carpenter, found east of camp; relatives were found later, but were unknown when this account was written.
- Of Mulholland, a teamster, little was known, then or ever.

All relatives were notified. Four bodies, besides that of Jacobsen, a local resident, went unclaimed and were buried side by side in the old cemetery after an impressive funeral, with the entire population of the village plus employees of the Sands Lumber Company as mourners.

The same day [of the fire?], the village of Falmouth had a narrow escape. A change in the wind saved the town after a couple dwellings had burned.

# [1894]

Main Street of Lake City was graveled in the spring of 1894<sup>78</sup>, perhaps the first real gravelling job of any size in the county.

On May 7, 1894, the village of McBain had a close call from fire. Several buildings on the west side of the main street burned, and only a hard fight and exceptional width of the street saved the other side.

In August [1894], more forest fires were reported. The train from Lake City to Cadillac was halted at Round Lake by fire and had to return for help to get through.

The original Bell patents expired this year, and independent lines began to appear. One of the first in northern Michigan was built from Stittsville, via Pioneer and Morey, to Lake City, in the fall of 1894.

In September [1894], two wooden bridges in Reeder Township burned.

# [1895]

# [Fires]

In 1895, fires continued to do much damage. Moorestown was swept by a forest fire that left only two buildings, the church and the Godfrey Hirzel residence. (The Moorsetown fire occurred on Monday, June 10, 1895. Sixteen buildings, including the J. Henry Moore's sawmill, barns, warehouses, residences, and the Hirzel store, [burned]. Mr. Hirzel was severely burned after going into the store to lock a safe and remove the cash drawer from a counter. Sixteen large hogs perished; board fences surrounding the 110 acre farm were burned as was the turf from the ground to depths of four to five inches. No rain had fallen for weeks. The fire was caused by a fire in the forest adjoining the village, forty rods to the west. A forest of hardwood timber was up against the north edge of the village. Timber had been cleared off land to the south and to the east and the land was being farmed. Had the village been surrounded by timber, the residents would most surely have also perished. This additional information has been added by Fred C. Hirzel, son of Godfrey Hirzel, Fred being past 10 years at the time of this fire.)

Several sawmills around the county were burned. Citizens of McBain were badly frightened, as they had only an old hand-pumper fire engine for protection, and a water system was planned for the future.

### [Smalley Robbery-Murder Case]

In August 1895, the county in general was much excited over the "Smalley Case." A Grand Rapids detective [was] aboard a GR&I train in that city, seeking a train robber who had held up and robbed a train on the Lake Shore road a short time before. As he entered the last car, a man arose and began shooting; [he] killed the detective and escaped. A man supposed to be the robber was located in McBain. Sherriff Tennant was out of town. Former Sherriff Gillis McBain, now a deputy, reinforced by Deputy Sherriff Spafford of Cadillac, both armed with rifles, went to the house where Smalley was reported, [and] found him sitting just inside the door with the door partly opened. The officers called for him to surrender, but his only reply was to kick the door shut. Both officers fired through the door. A woman and a couple of men ran out the back door, but no Smalley, and no sound from inside. After a

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>78</sup> Hirzel has transcribed "1904", but given the context, I believe he intends 1894.

while the officers entered the house and found him dead. He had two heavy revolvers on him, both loaded. The body was positively identified as the man wanted by policemen from Grand Rapids and by other persons. Some people tried to throw doubt on the identification, but there appeared little reason for their claims.

A local paper said, July 3<sup>rd</sup>, 1895, "Some excitement in the town Sunday. One funeral, five fights, and one runaway."

In October 1895, the township of Butterfield was organized. At the session of the supervisors which gave the new town existence, the question of adopting the county road system was first proposed, and action postponed until January. A motion to submit the question to the voters lost, 7 to 6.

### [1896]

Larman's sawmill finished its cut in 1896, and was wrecked.

On July 1<sup>st</sup>, 1896, Sands' mill cut its last log, and was wrecked and removed soon afterward. The pay roll from this mill and yard, while in operation, was said to have been about \$2000 per month, which is about half the present payroll of the county which employs less than half as many men. Wages were \$1.25 to \$1.50 per day for common labor. Highest pay, to skilled men who worked in the mill, was \$4.00 per day, and there were only five such employees.

(At this point, I, Fred C. Hirzel, feel that since Mr. George Stout's comparison with wages paid in 1890-1896 with wages paid presumably in 1917, at which time he wrote this history, [implies some disparity, and so some perspective is needed:] We need to consider that though the standard of living has risen a great deal from 1890 to 1917, we should consider that Mr. Sands--or nobody else lumbering or whatever business he was in--was not getting for his product what is being paid, often times for a somewhat inferior article today. [Hirzel's point seems to be that he believes Mr. Stout is exaggerating historical wages given low retail prices of lumber, as he demonstrates below.]

In the Lake City Journal of Jul 25, 1877, Daniel & William Reeder of lake City, owning a saw mill there, were advertising to sell dry pine lumber at retail; 2x4s and up to 2x10s at \$6.00 and \$3.00 per thousand feet if taken in 2000-foot quantities. One thousand feet would be sold at \$6.50 to \$9.00. In lesser amounts than 1000 feet, the price would be \$10 per [thousand] feet. If the Reeders were selling that lumber at Wholesale and by the carload, it would have brought still less. I have no idea that Mr. Sands got more than \$10.00 per thousand feet for his lumber delivered aboard the cars at Lake City. In fact, my father in 1897 sold rough hemlock lumber to a Cadillac dealer, who sent a lumber inspector to Moorestown to grade the lumber. He accepted only the very best and paid my father \$5.00 per thousand feet delivered and loaded aboard cars at Stratford, 4.5 miles from Moorestown. The \$5.00 was just \$2.00 more than charged by the sawmill operator who cut the lumber.

Another proof of low prices for lumber was told to me in 1938, by the late Mr. William J. Brinen, of Muskegon, a former member of the Thayer Lumber Company. Mr. Brinen said that until just prior to their finishing the harvest of the last of their pine timber in Missaukee and Kalkaska counties, did they

ever get so much as \$25.00 per thousand delivered to Chicago. Today in 1964, that same lumber would be worth several times \$25.00.

It also strikes me that Mr. Stout was speaking more than conservatively when he wrote of the pay of men other than skilled workmen, getting \$1.25 to \$1.50 a day. They certainly didn't get that much in the 1890s. In the woods, they got their meals and a bunk to sleep in and a per month wage. There are articles of news items in the old Lake City Journal when wages were raised from \$12.00 to \$15.00 per month, and even that was considered something wonderful. And mind you, they worked 10 hours per day, and they really worked. But if a man lived close enough to the camp, had a family and could walk to and from work, he could get a little more wage. At the same time, he could buy dressed hogs at 5 cents per pound, beef at \$0.70 per half a carcass, overalls at \$0.50 per pair, good shoes at \$2.00 per pair, beef steak at 3 pounds for \$0.25, 6 packages of so-called "scrap" tobacco, or 6 good cigars, for \$0.25 and all other commodities accordingly.

My father operated a general store at Moorestown from 1892 to 1908, and I still have the account books. At times when I have told of wages and prices of past years, someone would occasionally ask, "Yeh, but who had the twenty-five cents to buy that three pounds of beef steak?" To that one, I, who worked in my father's store, feel that I am qualified to counter with, "More men went home with six pounds of beef steak then, on a Saturday evening, to provide a big Sunday dinner, than goes home now with six pounds of beef steak in a whole week." The final analysis of this matter of comparing wages paid in the 1890s with those paid in 1917, to say nothing of including 1964 against the 1900s, proves nothing at all, unless it [is] that the dollar now [in 1964], as compared with the dollar then, isn't worth very much. In the 1900s, the dollar was at least worth 100 cents. F.C.H.)

(Continuing with Mr. Stout's history.)

On July 15, [1896,] it was reported that the lake had reached a low level, and had dropped five inches in the past two weeks.

In May of this year (1896), Grice Brothers contracted to and began the construction of a grist mill in Lake City.

# [1900s]

In May of 1900, construction of a full sized basement under the courthouse was ordered by the supervisors, and completed at a cost of \$298.63. A heating plant was installed some years later.

In October, 1901, on motion by Supervisor Servis of Lake, a county road system was submitted to the voters at the following April election, the vote standing 10 to 3. The voters approved; figures not available. Three commissioners were elected in November, and this was done. Apparently the supervisors didn't like the commissioners chosen or disapproved something they did. At any rate, the matter was submitted to the voters, and they voted the system out in April 1903.

# [Smallpox]

In 1902, smallpox broke out in some lumber camps and spread to some extent, so that cases appeared in McBain and Lake City too. It was two or three years before the county was entirely cleared of the disease. Only one or two deaths occurred. (I, Fred Hirzel, knows something about this small pox. We have records of provisions sold to pest houses, one of which was established on the Modi farm, three miles east of Moorestown. At one time, something like 20 men were confined in that place. The disease was especially present in the camp [of the] Maltby Lumber Company of Bay City, who were lumbering in Norwich Township, [on] the Dead Stream swamp. As Mr. Stout said, "only one or two deaths occurred." But some of the victims were terribly sick. The crude manner of not taking proper preventative measures, in today's terms of thinking, was appalling. I know a man, still living in Lansing, who, with smallpox, not at the time so diagnosed, boarded a train at Stratford, changed to another at Kalkaska, and went to a doctor in Cadillac who locked him in his office until the next morning, put him aboard the Ann Arbor train, and sent him to Clare at which place he boarded a Pere Marquette train and went to his parents' home in Harrison. And that, too, was in a day when passenger coaches were usually well patronized. Had the disease been of the more serious type, the population of a rather large area would no doubt have been pretty well peppered.

At this point I have decided to see what record I might find concerning the epidemic of the year of 1902 only. In a Norwich township record book, page 242, I find the names and home addresses of 20 men and the dates of their entering the pest house on the T.J. Modi farm. The 28 men entered from October 28, 1901, to February 22, 1902, and were discharged from November 8, 1901 to March 1<sup>st</sup>, 1902. Please note that the disease really started in the fall of 1901.

And though as Mr. Stout said, probably not more than a couple of men died of the disease, and I don't think they died in this vicinity. I do know of two men who had a very bad time and both came near to death. One of the men was a lumberjack whose name I once knew but cannot at the moment recall. He was of dark complexion and though he survived, he came out so badly scarred that even those who knew him well could scarcely recognize him ever afterward. Another whose name I do know and with whom I was well acquainted, and who I believe is still living in Flint, had a very bad time and a close communion with death. At that time, veterans of the Spanish-American War were fairly plentiful around here. Some of the soldiers had contracted what, at least the soldiers called, "the Cuban Itch". The man of which I write had not served in that war and hadn't contracted the disease, then on the rounds about here. He is known to have put one foot upon the hub of a friend's buggy and scornfully pronounced that he endured and survived, and in so far as he was concerned, whatever it was he said, he wouldn't care to experience another attack of the same.)

(Continuing with Mr. Stout's history.)

#### [various events: missing boy, autos & electricity]

In 1905, F.O. Gaffney was elected for his 13<sup>th</sup> term as President of Lake City, and declined re-election. He had never been defeated, and that was a record for Lake City politics in those days. He served first in 1890. Then in 1894, he was again elected and re-elected each year thereafter up to and including 1902-1905.

In 1903, the township of Enterprise was set off from West Branch in October of that year, and the east half of Clam Union, once known as Bradford, asked to be made a township again, under the name of "White". Request denied.

In 1902, May, Missaukee County had a mystery disappearance, which was never solved. Little Joey Heath, a lad of 11 years, left school at Turnerville for his home a mile west and a half mile south, on well-traveled roads, and was never seen again by his friends. Hundreds of men searched the surrounding country for days, without finding a trace.

It was the year of 1903 that the first automobile reached this county. It used steam power, and it driver, a traveling salesperson named William Richon of Cleveland, Ohio, reported he could make about ten miles per hour over all kinds of roads.

As the year 1904 closed, the first electric light plant was placed in operation in the county. It was owned by C.L. Ostrander and was operated in connection with the water works. Up to that time, the courthouse and the jail had been heated by stoves. In 1905, an attempt was made to get the supervisors to purchase a heating plant, but it was defeated and a long controversy followed. But it was not until April 1913 that a contract was let at \$1600.

McBain was incorporated as a city in 1907, and Johnson Wood appeared as the first supervisor from the first city organization in the county.

In 1906, F.C. Gaffney moved to Cadillac, where he had opened a law office some time before. He served the county as prosecuting attorney six terms, having been elected in 1886-1888, 1890, 1898, 1900, and 1902. (Of course, Mr. Stout means that Mr. Gaffney served these terms for Missaukee County. F.C.H.)

### [County Roads]

In October 1907, the county road system was again submitted to the voters. The latter approved in April. First commission appointed was composed of Abe Lucas, C.C. Crane, and R.R. Hoover. One mill was voted for roads, to produce \$2162. In April 1910, the supervisors again submitted the system to a vote, and again the voters turned it down.

In January 1911, the supervisors again submitted the system to a vote, and the voters said "yes." Wm. Keelan, Martin Iverson, and Johnson Wood were named as the first commission, and apparently won approval from supervisors and voters, as there has never been any serious attempt made since then to change it, although progress seemed slow for a long a time. There were so many bad roads and so little money. All sections wanted their roads first. Local jealousies flared and were hard to satisfy.

Presently, the state began to offer bonuses for the construction of gravel roads, and what was to be the state trunk line system was beginning to assume form as a possibility of the future. To get it started, double bonuses were offered for work done on any proposed trunk line route. The local commission seized on this plan, succeeded in getting several roads designated as trunk lines, and devoted attention to those to secure the added state money. The plan worked well, and it was not long until sufficient progress had been made to convince doubters that the county system would bring good roads, better

than any township efforts could possibly do. Later, the state took over all the trunk lines, and the county began a system of county highways carrying the largest traffic, connecting up with the trunk lines. Then, in 1931,<sup>79</sup> a new law provided the counties should take over all the township roads within five years. This is the system under which we now operate.

In 1908, when the county road system finally became operative, there was not a mile of what we would now call improved road in the county. In 1911, there were very few farms in the county that were not reached by a well graded, well drained road, and few that were not reached by a graveled road.

# [Temperance]

In 1908, the question of local option as a temperance measure first appeared before the supervisors in January, and was submitted to a vote in April. To the surprise of many, the voters said "dry," 1153 to 828 "wet." Two years later, in the fall of 1910, a second vote was taken. At first trail [in 1908], the politicians were very cagey, for the most part, and avoided committing themselves. But when cornered, usually guessed the vote would be "wet." Now, in 1910, they thought they knew the county was dry and made themselves conspicuous on that side. The vote was "dry" 983, "wet" 953, and the politicians were shocked. In 1912, another vote was taken and the wise guys thought it would be "wet" this time, surely. Result: "dry" 1153, "wet" 789. Now what could a poor politician do? State prohibition followed a couple years later.

In January 1914, what had once been the township of Bradford again asked to be organized as a township. In spite of some opposition, the application was approved and the township named Holland. In spite of the fact that the federal government, about 1885, required title to more than half of this township--under the plea that it was "sub-marginal" land and not suitable for agriculture--the township appears to be getting along as well as its neighbors.

In October 1916, the supervisors first authorized the employment of a county farm agent, and in March 1917, H. Lee Barman took over the position.

# [Hirzel's Closing Remarks]

(Thus here ends the copying of the history [of] Missaukee County for the years 1871 through 1917, as written by Mr. George Stout of Lake City, now for some years deceased. This [history] having been copied by Fred C. Hirzel, who knew Mr. Stout for many years, during which time he was owner and editor of one of our two county weekly newspapers. Mr. Stout was also a son of one of Missaukee County pioneer families, his father being Abraham Stout, who, as George Stout told me, built his house out of logs in a wilderness, his only tools being a cross-cut saw, axe, broad-axe, draw-shave, and a pocket jack-knife, with which sort of tools they built not only the house and barn, but also the major portion of the furniture.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>79</sup> This date seems in error if it was written by Stout in 1917. It's either an unmarked addition from Hirzel in 1964 or a typographical error.

I only care to further add that I have in no manner altered Mr. Stout's writings. And since I have copied history only for the benefit of my family, close relatives, and a few close friends, I have added bits of information and historical matter, all of which can be documented.

I am not one of Norwich Township's "pioneers," but I am the oldest resident of the township who was born here. After reading old newspaper files at various times, over a period of more than twenty years, the man whose name dates back the farthest is that of one William Barkley, who was hauling grain to a grist mill at Cadillac with two teams of oxen hitched to his wagon—grain to have ground into flour for bread and pancakes and also corn meal. And Mr. Barkley was petitioning for the construction of [a] road to pass on the section line in front of his farm home in 1871. This was fourteen years before I was born. But at that time, I do not believe that more than ten per cent of the timber had been cut down in the township. And in those days, the harvesting of the timber was generally referred to as "letting daylight into the swamp."

Of course, I am not regarding myself as being possessed of any degree of literary perfection, but I do wish to say that the pen corrections in these pages [of Hirzel's typed transcription of Stout's history] were made by me. And that is not saying that I don't make mistakes. And in fact, I can't spell and I can't punctuate. The only punctuation mark that I do understand the meaning of is the "period." When speaking, I use that when I run out of breath. Strictly speaking, I really don't know very much, but I have managed to get by, for almost eighty years.

I am, sincerely, [signed] Fred C. Hirzel, born in Norwich Township, T24N,R6W, near the west edge of section 26. Which is to say, one mile south of Moorestown Methodist Church, thence west one half mile thence about 40 rods, one 1/8 of a mile south.

# Pre-Historic Mounds (1883)

Grand Rapids Democrat, 3 August 1883

Capt. Coffinberry's Investigation of Some in Missaukee County, on lands he Surveyed over Thirty Years Ago.

# [An Expedition to Missaukee]

Last Saturday morning, about 7:10 o'clock, Mr. T.J.W. Porter and Capt. Wright L. Coffinberry started for Lake City, in the county of Missaukee; that is located on land which Mr. Coffinberry resurveyed for the government 30 years ago. <sup>80</sup> They went on an archeological exploring expedition. Mr. Coffinberry returned yesterday from his trip and was interviewed by a *Democrat* reporter.



**WL Coffinberry** 

He told the story of the trip as follows: "In April last I became acquainted with Dan. Reeder, proprietor of Lake City. He was a traverse juror in the U.S. court at that time with me; and finding him to be from that part of the state, I inquired in what part of the county his city is located, and found by his description that it was right on the ground where my first camp on the beautiful lake was situated.

"Being always on the inquiry for mounds and ancient earthworks, when I was informed by Mr. Reeder that there was a pre-historic mound on the west side of their lake (which is known as Muskrat Lake), that had never been explored, and he invited me to come out to his city and he would do what he could to help me investigate it. I accepted the invitation and went, Mr. Porter accompanying me.

"We arrived in Lake city on the Evening of July 14, and rested over the next day, it being Sunday, and on Monday we proceeded to explore the mound.

# **Digging into the Past**

"It is one of those small conical mounds in which our country abounds and in which we frequently find some very interesting relics, but this one, like many others I have explored, did not yield a rich reward for our labor. Its size is only about twenty feet in diameter at the base and from four to five feet high in the center.

"Near the center and top about six inches deep below the surface, we found some very much decayed human bones. I took them to be Indian bones, from the fact that Mr. Louis Campau told us that Indians, knowing these mounds to be the work of some ancient race of men, had a veneration for them and frequently buried on or near them. <sup>81</sup> The bones of those buried so near the surface of the ground seem

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>80</sup> Wright Lewis Coffinberry (5 April 1807 - 26 March 1889) had a storied career in Michigan surveying and archeology. See <a href="http://grplpedia.grpl.org/wiki/images/0/05/061.pdf">http://grplpedia.grpl.org/wiki/images/0/05/061.pdf</a> for more on his life. John Brink had led a surveying team in the 1830s that surveyed all of Missaukee, and Coffinberry led one of several teams that resurveyed Missaukee in the 1850s. Their maps are available with the Michigan archives.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>81</sup> There was once a popular myth that the mounds and earthworks had been built by a people somehow not the Native Americans that the Europeans met when they arrived here.

generally to be more decayed than those buried in the natural ground and the mound built over them. The best preserved bones are those deepest-buried.

"As to our find in the mound, down below its base, where we expect to find the relics of the mound builders proper, we found many fragments of a very coarse, rough character of pottery, which would indicate that the class of mound builders had not arrived at a very scientific degree in the ceramic art. What we did find appeared to be altogether fragmentary, being on the surface of the ground, from which the material was gathered to build the mound, but not deposited as charms or totems or mementoes of anything, but more accidental than otherwise. I brought but on fragment home."

### **Another Taken In**

"We visited another mound of much the same character, but we found on arriving at it that some other iconoclasts had been there before us. We went through it, but found nothing in it.

# [Missaukee from Wilderness to City]

Missaukee County, considering its location on the lower peninsula, its fine pine timber, and some excellent land for agriculture, I cannot forbear saying a word regarding the change wrought in that howling wilderness of thirty years ago. And that then, where I camped and the young city now stands, our music on lonely evenings was that of loons on the lake, singing out their long drawn falsetto notes of about three octaves and the chorus taken up by a pack of wolves back in the woods in the rear of our camp. But these occurrences were so frequent we used to feel lost without them.

Now the white painted buildings, the church with its tall spire, the school house, where the young are being prepared to take the places which the old must soon vacate for a more permanent home are there, and the loons and wolves are silenced. [Illegible line] of Grand Rapids, it is small, but large enough for the business of the place, and painted up handsomely. All new places in the woods must have their first pioneers, and D. Reeder and his amiable lady entered this wilderness 15 years ago to make a new beginning. <sup>82</sup> Mr. and Mrs. Reeder now have a nice little city to live in, with many of their friends around them, with all the appurtenances of a new enterprising city."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>82</sup> Dan Reeder was widowed before immigrating to Missaukee, and remarried on 29 Feb 1872 to Mary Amelia Quick after several years in Michigan.

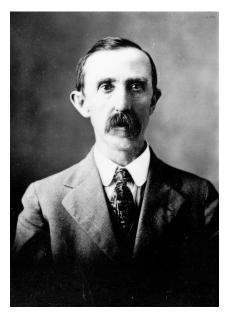
# The Story Of A Year In Missaukee County (1891)

Edited by George S. Stout, 1891. Issued by The Independent, Lake City, Mich.

Being a Review of the Events of the Year 1891 Within the Limits of Missaukee County, Together with Other Sketches, Biographies, etc., of interest to people of this County.

[This is the earliest known history of Missaukee county, drawing from newspapers and eyewitness accounts. Stout appears to have published it as a special booklet as part of his newspaper business. This document later served as a source for other histories, including Mary Reeder's 1902 paper and Stout's own 1917 history. It seems to be a kind of community propaganda, not only for encouraging local reflection, but possibly as an advertisement to attract more settlers.]

## **INTRODUCTORY**



Respectfully submitted,

THE EDITOR.

THE STORY OF A YEAR is not offered to the public as work of great literary merit, nor does it claim to be complete in all its details. It has been prepared hurriedly, and under difficulties. Briefly stated, the object was to give to our readers a brief chronological review of the year 1891, with the scope limited strictly to Missaukee County; together with brief pan pictures of our county and villages as they are today, with such statistics as could be hastily gathered. Not even a pen stroke was made towards the work of compilation until December 24th, 1891. so the work was necessarily hasty done.

In compiling the chronology, the county papers necessarily furnished the dates, most of which were naturally obtained from the Missaukee *Independent*, and the balance from the McBain *Chronicle*. It is believed that what is given is accurate or as nearly so as it can be made, and that the errors are mostly those of omission.

# 1891: A Chronological Review of the Events of the Year in Missaukee County.

# **January**

- 1 H. Owens' resignation as cashier of the Missaukee County Bank takes effect. He is succeeded by A. Stout.
- 5 Board of Supervisors met. Wm. M. Taylor elected chairman to fill vacancy. Geo. E. Nelson succeeds C. McCallum (resigned) as supervisor of Norwich; and C. Gallinger takes the place of P. E. Hollihan (resigned) of Lake. Session closes at noon, Friday, Jan. 9<sup>th</sup>.
- 5 Ice harvest opened. Ice about 14 inches thick.
- 6 Wm. J. Becker bought the Stitt Bros. stock of goods at Stittsville.
- 8 McIntyre & Smith bought H.K. Almes grocery stock in Lake City.
- 10 First marriage license of the year issued.
- 10 Sudden death of Mrs. Alex Decoigne, of McBain.
- 12 Rice & Bradfield, attorneys, locate in Lake City.
- 12 Annual meeting of Agricultural Society. Officers elected: Pres., R.D. Barry; Sec. W.J. Roche; Treas. A. Stout.
- 13 H. Owens and D.M. Witt and families left Lake City for Provo City, Utah.
- 14 Mr. & Mrs. J.T. Allen's silver wedding.
- 16 Mrs. Gustafson of Lake City seriously injured by being struck by a G.R.& I. train, while walking on the track.
- 22 P. of I's county association elected officers: Pres. R. McDermott; Sec., Andrew Young.
- 23 Case of S. Olson vs. Wellington Cummer, et al., on trial at Cadillac. Judgment of \$800 for Olsen. Appealed.
- 27 Messrs. D. Reeder, Thos. Kelley, Wm. J. Morey, Wm. Doyle and F.O. Gaffney purchase an interest in the Missaukee Co. Bank.
- 27 Sands' mill men strike for higher pay, but are unsuccessful.
- 27 An election held in Richland township to secure an expression of the wishes of the people regarding the licensing of a saloon in that township. Results yes 11; no 57.
- 31 Isaac Burket, of Riverside, painfully scalded by escaping steam in his father's mill.

### **February**

- 2 Scarlet fever in Norwich.
- 3 Amos G. Tennant, keeper of county poor farm, dies.
- 5 W. Orcutt and Thos. Robinson each receive broken legs by a green hand turning the steam "nigger" in Sands' mill, in the wrong direction.
- 11 Geo. S. Stout and Miss Dora L. Gibson were married.
- 12 Lake City Encampment I.O.O.F. instituted by G.C.P. Owen of Muskegon.
- 13 Dr. Nichols locates in Lake City.
- 19 John Van Meter and Jane Hunter of Riverside, married.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>83</sup> Clearly an offensive ethnic epithet now, it's meaning is unclear in this 1891 usage, but by the context appears to be an industrial lever or wheel.

- 21 County Teachers' Association meet.
- 22 Geo. A. Jessop and Ida M. Riley of Mc8ain, married.
- 28 Dr. Decker returned to Lake City.

#### March

- 3 Lake City village election. A non-partisan contest.
- 4 to 6 Circuit court in session. Four saloon keepers fined for violation of liquor laws. No other important cases.
- 23 C. P. Thomas leaves Lake City.
- 23 Sands logging engine "Flora M. Sands" arrives.
- 25 J. Hardy of Moorestown moves to New York.
- 25 J. Olson killed in Sands' mill.

### April

- 5 Elmer Hewes end Kittie Charter of McBain, married.
- 6 Township elections; Board of Supervisors stands democrats 6; republicans, 4; independents, 2.
  - Just half of the old board was re-elected; Messrs. Nelson, Bardwell, Roberts, Morden, Taylor, and McBain.
  - o The new members are Ingersoll, Ball, Iverson, Boynton, Brace, and Vis.
  - o On state ticket, the county gives the Democrats 387, Republicans 418,
  - o Prohibition 24. Amendment Yes 247; No 177.
- 6 Marriage license issued to Wm. S. Pollard and Miss Alice Slade.
- 10 Frank Vorce, who has been operating in the shingle business at McBain, left for parts unknown and attachment suits begun.
- 11 Symes' mill at McBain started up for its summer run.
- 19 Arbuckle Bros. saw mill at Lake City burned. No insurance. It was rebuilt shortly afterwards.
- 19 Loren, son of Horace Bailey of Forest, died of consumption.
- 20 Board of supervisors meet. Wm. M. Taylor re-elected chairman, receiving every vote except his own.
- 20 Ice went out of Muskrat Lake.
- 21 William Thorn resigns the office of village Marshal, and is succeeded by William Willett.
- 24 Moses Burket of Riverside, knee broken.
- 25 D. Gibson loses two fingers from his left hand by coming in contact with a saw in Kelly's handle factory.
- 29 John W. Stewart of Moorestown and Miss Lydia Philp of Lake City, married.

#### May

- About the 1st Inst., J.S. Wilson purchased the Palmer House at Falmouth.
- 1 T.&A. Surveyors at work near Moorestown.
- 4 Fire damaged S. Langley's residence, Lake City. \$100 worth. No insurance.
- 5 Cromwell's roller factory at McBain, started.

- 10 J.H. Buckley of Lake City became violently insane.
- 11 Chas. Kelin's two-year-old boy hurt, at McBain, by being crushed under a stone boat.
- 13 Forest fires raging. Little damage done in this county.
- 13 Baker Bros.' mill at McBain damaged by fire.
- 14 Adelbert Winters had his leg broken while loading logs on the G.R.&I. R.R.
- 16 Cornelius Lindhout of Falmouth seriously cut by falling on a saw.
- 19 Matthew Exellby died of dropsy of the heart.
- 20 Commercial House, Lake City, damaged by fire. Loss on building and contents \$1000. No
  insurance.
- 22 and 23 County Sunday School Convention.
- 25 C.W. Cromwell of McBain had his hand badly cut on a buzz saw in his factory.
- 26 Fred Pilkie was killed by a log falling from a car on Cummer's logging road, north of Lake City.
- Norwich township bought a library this month.

## **June**

- 1 D.E. Jessop's foot crushed in his mill at McBain.
- 1 Fire set by someone under Mrs. H.N. McIntire's house on Pine Street, Lake City. No damage.
- 4 Wm. Seacord seriously injured at Wm. McDonnell's barn raising, in Riverside township.
- 10 McIntyre & Smith grocers, Lake City, dissolved partnership, Smith retiring.
- 11 Wm. Jackson, Riverside, barn and contents burned.
- 18 Van I. Witt and Miss Lulu Angeline Barr, married.
- 22 Supervisors met. Thos. McManus represented Pioneer, during the illness of Sup. Bardwell.
   Miss Georgia Roche was chosen County School Commissioner. Rue P. Lamb was elected examiner for two years and C.L. Goll for one year.

#### **Iulv**

- 4 Mrs. I.J. Symes hurt by being thrown from a horse at her home in McBain.
- 4 Celebrations in all the villages in the county.
- 6 Prof. E. Wood and wife bid farewell to Lake City.
- 8 Mitchell Bros.' Lumber yard planing mill and four houses at Jennings burned. Loss \$200,000.
   Insured for \$139,500.
- 14 Vernon Gerrish becomes conductor on the C.&N.E.
- 21 Circuit court sits, and continues until the 25th. Three saloon keepers fined. Clark's mill case settled; Sable and Savers each winning their suits against the sheriff.

#### **August**

- 2 Van I. Witt takes possession of the drug store in Lake City heretofore owned by Herbert A. Firher.
- 3 Occidental House in Lake City, opened by R. W. Sova.
- 3 Frost does considerable damage throughout the county.
- 11 Geo. Snow of Norwich moves to Bridgeport Centre, Me.

- 11 Adjourned term of circuit court.
  - o Riverside twp. Personal tax cases tried. This was a case of considerable importance for the reason that it raised a point seldom heard of. Jas. Cavanagh owned personal property in two separate road and school districts, [both] in that township, and lived in one of them. Property was assessed where it lay. Cavanagh refused to pay tax on one lot, claiming it should all be assessed where he lived. Treasurer did not try to collect. A new treasurer was elected in April, who made former treasurer get a warrant from County Treasurer, and on this warrant tried to force collection, hence the suit.
  - The court held that the warrant was void because [it was] not issued within the prescribed time.
  - o No other point passed on.
- 12 The first circus ever in this county (Mat Wixom's) exhibits at Lake City, and at McBain the following day.
- 17 J.H. Eppink's mill at Lucas, burned. No insurance.
- 17 James L. Sharp died in Sands' comp, of heart failure.
- 29 Dr. Yarrington located in McBain.
- 30 Attempted burglary at the McBain Depot.

### **September**

- 7 John Hadley of McBain had his skull broken by an exploding gun.
- 8 Andrew Young appointed president of agricultural society.
- 13 Bethany Presbyterian church at McBain, dedicated.
- 19 E. D. Moore's family and E. Fagan and wife of Moorestown, leave for Americus, Mississippi.
- 21 Rev. J. A. Kennedy of Lake City and Miss Jennie C. Morrison of Traverse City, married.
- 23 Wm. Reeder and family return from Oregon, to stay.
- 23 Contract for building North Lake City school house let to Jno. P. Liephart. Price, \$726.50.
- 23 John Card, aged 15 years, died at McBain.

#### **October**

- 1 Contract for medical attendance of poor of the county awarded to Dr. Erwin, at \$195.
- 7 F. L. McCurdy, aged 21 years, died at Mc8ain.
- 7, 8, 9 Missaukee County Fair.
- 12 Board of Supervisors met. Adjourned on the 17th inst. making the shortest annual session on record. Hiram Schepers elected Superintendent of the Poor, succeeding Martin Duffy.
- 13 A.B. McIntyre's grocery store, Lake City, closed.
- 20 Mary Belle McBain, aged 22, died at her home in McBain.
- 24 County Teacher's Association met.

#### **November**

• 2 - H.K. Wickham, attorney, locates in lake City.

- 2 Daniel C. White of Lake City fatally injured by the accidental discharge of his gun, while hunting. The load of fine shot entered the right leg, near the hip, and passed up into the body. He died on the morning of the 11 inst.
- 4 Delos Spencer returned to Lake City, after an extended prospecting tour in Washington.
- 4 P.O.I. Store and John Nelson's dwelling house in Jennings burned. No insurance.
- 18 Dwelling house of John Cowan, McBain, burned.
- 24 County Sunday School Convention.
- 25 Muskrat lake freezes over.
- 26 Mrs. F. H. Chatfield of McBain, died.

#### **December**

- 1 Thos. McManus of Pioneer, moves to Oregon.
- 1 George W. Hughston, postmaster at McBain, died.
- 4 Lake City's street lamps lit for the first time.
- 5 Fire in Occidental House, Lake City, caused by lamp explosion. Loss \$25.
- 8 Circuit court. Adjourned the 12th inst.
- 18 Died, at McBain. Mrs. Sarah J. Souvereen, aged 18.
- 19 Mrs. L. L. Crane of Pioneer died.
- 19 House of Chas. Wanstein of Jennings burned, together with a trunk containing \$900 in cash. No insurance.
- 19 E. P. Liddle opens a store et Stittsville.
- 22 John North and Miss Florence Exelby of Lake City, married.
- 24 Christmas trees in nearly every school house in county.
- 75 E.J. Woodin of Forest moves to Stanton.
- 27 Charles Holmquist, drowned in Crooked Lake, while skating.
- 30 C.C. Follmer & Co., of Grand Rapids lease about 140 rods of frontage, on Muskrat Lake, for ice houses.

# **Marriages**

During the year, sixty-five marriage licenses were issued from the County clerk's office. Of this number, three were not yet retuned, Dec. 31st. One of the latter was issued some six months ago, and probably not used; the other two were issued late in December.

This leaves sixty-two weddings to be accounted for. Of these, eight couples were married outside of the county, leaving fifty-nine weddings within its limits. Of this number, sixteen knots were tied by various Justices of the Peace, and the balance by ministers. Rev. Jas. A. Kennedy heads the list with 14 weddings to his credit, the tally for the others standing as follows: W.Z. Cole 3; Jas. Berry, 3; W. J. Rainey, 3; J. Schepers, 3; L. Baroux 3; G. W. Howe, I; total 46. The remaining eight were married by non-resident ministers.

Of the total of 130 persons licensed to wed, 49 were born in Michigan, 11 in New York, 4 in Indiana, 4 in Penn., 4 in Ohio, 2 in III., 1 in Wis., 3 in England, 3 in Germany, 9 in Holland, 20 in Canada, 1 in Denmark, 4 in Ireland, 4 in Sweden, and 4 wore reported unknown.

By occupation, they are classified thus: Grooms – farmers 30; laborers, 17; mechanics, 2; contractors, 1; foremen, 2; painters, 1; editors, 1; engineers, 3; carpenters, 1;, barbers, 1; lumber inspectors, 1; teachers, 1; clerks, 2; brakemen, 1; clergymen, 1. Brides - domestics, 52; seamstresses, 3; teachers, 9; clerks, 1.

Twelve brides and seven grooms were non-residents. The balance were divided as follows:

	Brides Grooms	
Lake City	8	9
McBain	4	6
Jennings	4	6
Lucas	2	1
Norwich	3	4
Pioneer	1	0
Bloomfield	1	0
Caldwell`	6	7
Forest	2	4
West Branch	2	2
Aetna	3	4
Reeder	3	3
Lake	1	1
Richland	3	4
Riverside	4	3
Clam Union	6	4

# Our County as It Is

MISSAUKEE COUNTY was organized in 1871, and has therefore just closed the 20th year of her corporate existence. It was first attached to Manistee county, and afterwards to Wexford. It now contains 12 organized townships - the east tier of towns each contains two surveyed townships within its limits. This is explained by the kinds of timber and soil, distance from railways, lack of roads, etc. The west three-fourths of the county is dotted with prosperous settlements of farmers, villages, post offices, school houses and churches. Closely adjoining these are large tracts of hardwood lands which can be bought at reasonable prices on easy terms. The soil of these hardwood lands vary between clay, gravelly loam, and sandy loam. Beneath the last two, a clay subsoil is usually found.

The county owns its own buildings, all paid for, which will accommodate all the needs of public business for several years to come. The court house is a frame structure; erected in 1883, at a cost of \$10,000. The jail is a brick structure, with a neat frame sheriff's residence in front, built in 1886, at a cost of something over \$7,000.

This county contains immense belts of hardwood timber, still untouched, comprising large quantities of bird's eye and curly maple, rock elm, oak, cherry, ash, basswood, and beech, besides quantities of hemlock, cedar, etc. Water is plenty, and of excellent quality; the county containing a number of lakes and several running streams.

That an excellent field is open here for hardwood manufacturing establishments, is indisputable. The raw material lies in endless abundance, at our doors. Anyone wishing any information concerning the county can secure it by addressing either the *Independent*, the *Republican* or the postmaster at Lake City, the *Chronicle* at McBain, or John Koopman at Falmouth.

# **Our Villages**

## **Lake City**

Lake City is the county seat and metropolis of the county. It is a pretty village of about 1200 inhabitants, picturesquely located on the east shore of Muskrat Lake. The lake is about three miles long by two miles wide, and is justly called the prettiest inland lake in the state. Its waters are plentifully stocked with bass, pickerel, etc.

The village was incorporated by the board of supervisors, the first election of officers being held in March, 1887, having at that time a population of about 300. It was re-incorporated by a special act of the legislature during the session of 1891.

Its business buildings are a substantial character, and indicate the faith of her people in the future of their town. Main Street boasts two handsome brick blocks, second to none in this section of the state.

Louis Sands' mill (declared by many to be the largest and best equipped saw mill in this state of big mills), is located in this village, and together with his adjacent camps, logging railway, lath mill, shingle mill, etc., gives employment to something like 300 men the year around. A planing mill is to be added to the plant soon.

The small mills of Arbuckle Bros. and F.L. Decker, with D.B. Kelley's handle factory, also employ a number of men, and manufacture a quantity of lumber, shingles, broom handles, chair rounds, etc. each year.

Lake City has an excellent system of water works, two railroads, street lamps, a sound banking institution, an excellent graded school, and all lines of mercantile business are well represented. There are three excellent hotels, three doctors, three lawyers, two weekly newspapers, etc.

During the year 1891, several thousand dollars' worth of buildings wore erected. In the south end of the village, near Sands' mill, a score or more of his employees have built neat frame cottages. In the north end, among the residences built this year, are those of S. A. Howey, Chas. A. Sands, Jas. M. Proctor, Geo. S. Stout, S. W. McChesney, J. K. Seafuse, Anthony Brightenburg, etc., besides Arbuckle's mill, the North Lake City school house, and various additions, alterations, etc. Figures showing the cost of each are not at hand, but the aggregate runs high up in the thousands.

The Present village officers are: President, F. E. Cornwell; Clerk, W. E. Morris; Treasurer, Jas. B. White; Street Commissioner, L. B. Boynton; Marshal, Wm. Willett; Assessor, R. McDermott; Trustees - D. J. Erwin, A. Stout, J.E. Gleason, Wm. Pratt, Wm. A. Minthorn, and Jno D. Ransom.

#### **McBain**

McBAIN is a three-year-old village, with a population of between three and four hundred souls, situated on the Toledo, Ann Arbor, & North Michigan Railway. It lies directly south of Lake City, ten miles distant, and is the same distance from Cadillac. Ever since its foundation, the village has shown considerable push and enterprise, and that it will become quite a hardwood manufacturing town, seems probable, and it is already making a start in that direction.

Its manufacturing establishments comprise Baker Bros.' saw and planing mill, which runs almost constantly the year round; Symes Bros.' saw and planing mill, with a capacity of 25,000 to 30,000 feet per day; C. W. Cromwell's roller factory, an institution established this year for the purpose of making maple roller bolts for export to England, and which gives employment to 15 to 20 men, besides making a market for large quantities of timber; a large set of charcoal kilns are operated by F. Desmond.

The village has one newspaper, The *Chronicle*, L. Van Meter, editor and publisher. The different mercantile lines are well represented. The educational wants of the place are provided for by a new two-story frame schoolhouse, with an enrollment of over eighty scholars. The Bethany Presbyterian church building was dedicated Sept. 13th, 1891. Rev. W.J. Rainey is pastor.

The village is becoming quite an important shipping point; the average monthly shipments from that station being about 2,300,000 pounds.

#### **Jennings**

JENNINGS is the third village in point of population, containing about 300 inhabitants. It is built on the bluffs of the northwest shore of Crooked Lake, about five miles west of Lake City. It is a typical lumber town, its population being almost wholly made up of the employees in Mitchell Bros. & Murphy's saw

and planing mill, and their families. The burg is certain of a five or ten years lease of life, at least, as the Mitchell Bros' timber will last that long. Before that is gone, something may succeed it which will place the village on a lasting foundation. It has one railroad - the G.R.& I.

#### Lucas

LUCAS is probably the fourth village in size and is situated in one of the best belts of farming lands in Northern Michigan. Situated on the T.A.A.&N.M. Railway, eight miles from Cadillac and twelve miles from Lake City, it is quite a shipping point for hardwood timbers, lumber, etc. The annual shipment of cedar, hemlock bark, shingles, etc., is also considerable. Its growth has not, and never will be, of the mushroom, boom order, but backed by a good farming country, will be slow and substantial; and although its nearness to larger places will hold it back, it will make a prosperous country village, in time.

### **Falmouth**

FALMOUTH is situated on Clam River, ten miles from McBain (the nearest railroad station and shipping point), nineteen miles from Cadillac, thirteen miles from Lake City, twenty-five miles from Harrison and thirteen miles from Marion. It is surrounded by good farming land on all sides; principally timbered with hardwood, and already well interspersed with thrifty settlers, whose farms range from 25 to 100 acres or more of cultivated lands. The early log houses and barns are rapidly giving way to the more attractive and commodious frame buildings.

There is also a fine water power here, which furnishes ample power for saw and shingle mill and a roller process flour mill, which affords a market for most of the logs and grain produced by the farmers. There is a large general store, carrying a good stock of such goods as are required by the surrounding country; also a good hotel, a jewelry store, and a blacksmith and wagon shop. J.B. Sloezer superintends a Presbyterian Sunday school.

A planing mill will be put in during the winter. There are good prospects that the town will soon have a railroad, as the T.A.A.&N.M. railway company have surveyed their proposed Mackinaw extension through, and which will, in all probability, be built next season. The country is progressing, and every year adds new farms and sees the enlargement of the old ones.

#### **Vogel Center**

VOGEL CENTRE is about five miles farther down the river; has a sawmill, general store, hotel, hardware store and a blacksmith shop. The surrounding country is good farming land, except on the north, where a belt of plains stretches along the north and east side of the river, which it follows to its mouth. The farms are under a good state of cultivation. The settlement is composed exclusively of Hollanders.

### **Stittsville**

STITTSVILLE, Moorestown, and Pioneer, each contain a "cross-roads store," and are all patiently waiting for a railroad to accelerate their growth. A prosperous hamlet will spring up around any or all of them, if lucky enough to secure the long looked-for iron road.

### **Churches and Pastors**

# [Lake City: Methodist Episcopal]

The first sermon preached in Lake City<sup>84</sup> was in January, 1874, in the old courthouse, by John R. Robinson, a half-breed Indian. He was a local preacher in the M.E. Church, and at that time resided in Grand Rapids, but was here fishing on Muskrat Lake, and was invited to preach by some of the few settlers here at that time.

Occasional services were held from that time on by ministers who were traveling through, or visiting friends. Several attempts were made to make permanent organizations by ministers from some of the towns of the railroad, but it was not until in September, 1883, that the Methodist Episcopal church was organized, by Rev. W.R. Stinchcomb, Presiding Elder of Grand Traverse District, with Rev. I. Eagle as preacher in charge. The first class consisted of eighteen persons. Daniel Reeder was appointed class leader, which position he has held up to the present time.

In September 1884, Rev. J.M. Smith came to the charge, and remained three years. During the first year the parsonage was built, and during the second the church was erected and dedicated August 1st, 1886; the Rev. Dr. Smart of the Detroit Conference, officiating.

In September 1887, Rev. E.A. Tanner came as pastor, to be followed by Rev. J. Steffe in 1888. Then came Rev. G.W. Howe in 1889 and remained two years.

In September 1891, the present pastor, Rev. J. Berry was appointed to the work. He finds a good church building and a comfortable parsonage, all out of debt; a membership of fifty-seven; a good Sunday School, under the superintendence of Geo. W. Wood; a Ladies Aid Society in good working order, an Epworth League was recently organized.

The Church seems to be in a fairly prosperous condition, and is doing something to make the morals of Lake City what they ought to be.

The church building and parsonage are located on the corner of John and Pine streets, two blocks east of Main.

JAMES BERRY, the present pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Lake City, was born in Brampton, Ont., Nov. 26, 1849. He became a resident of Michigan in 1859. Was admitted into the Michigan Conference of the M.E. church at its session in Grand Rapids in 1875. His appointments have been in the Southern part of the state until 1890, when he was stationed at Harbor Springs.

### [Lake City: Presbyterian]

FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, of Lake City, was organized January 15th, 1889, by a committee from the Presbytery of Petoskey, consisting of Rev. F.E. Stout of Petoskey and Rev. Jas. Lamb of Cadillac, with 26 members. Rev. J.A. Kennedy, under the instruction of the Presbytery of Grand Rapids, visited Lake City,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>84</sup> While Lake City is clearly primary in Stout's mind, the Vogel Center Dutch Reformed community had been meeting weekly for worship from their beginning in 1868, and organized a formal church by 1872.

about the first of September, 1888, and preached his first sermon here on the second Sabbath of the same month, in the old school house. Mr. Kennedy was at this time in Riverside, working for the organization of a church there, which took place December 11, 1888; so visited Lake City once in two weeks, preaching in the old school house until the time the church was organized, and then in the court house up to the time the church was dedicated, on December 8th, 1889. The dedication sermon was preached by Rev. J. Lamb, Cadillac. Immediately after the organization of the church, pastor and members spread their sails to catch the breeze of enthusiasm which was blowing. A subscription list was circulated, and although the people had recently suffered so much from the fire, all responded heartily. Plans for a church building were drawn by Mr. Geo. E. Nelson, and approved by the building committee. As soon as the snow took its departure, work was commenced, and by the heroic effort of the members and people of Lake City, the beautiful church was dedicated within one year from the time of the organization, which shows that the people possessed a good supply of consecration, grace, and grit.

The church building is situated on the corner south from the court house; [it] is built of brick with a metallic roof; [it has] a bell weighing sixteen hundred pounds, stained glass windows which cost \$275, circular seats for 400 persons (which are very comfortable, costing about \$400), roomy church parlor, [and] is heated by a Boynton furnace. The lots upon which the church stands, with the building, cost about \$15,000. As a number who promised money and labor, failed for some unexceptional reason to fulfill their pledges, the trustees are still shouldering some debt, and would be glad to see all pledges redeemed. The "Ladies Society," helped by the people of Lake City, are working courageously, so we hope soon to see this church shake off the cloud of financial embarrassment. About \$300 pledged is still unpaid.

When this church was organized, three elders were elected and ordained - J.B. Ashbaugh, A.C. Lewis, and S.B. Ardis, who still fill their office. J.E. Wright and J.U. Arbuckle were elected and set apart as deacons. The present trustees are S.B. Ardis, A.C. Lewis, J.B. Ashbaugh, K.K. Almes, F.E. Cornwell, and William Arbuckle.

From a spiritual standpoint, the work of this church has been of a steady growth. No communion has passed since the church was organized, without some new members uniting. Its membership at present is 51. All is moving along in Christian harmony; in connection with the church there is a flourishing Sunday school, over which J.E. Wright watches with commendable zeal, and has since the school started. There is also a Young Peoples' Society, Ladies' Society, and Missionary Society, all doing good work.

J.A. Kennedy, the present pastor, was born in County Antrim, Ireland, and received his early education in the place of his birth. The last three years were spent in London England, where he finished his education in 1887. [He] Landed in this country September 8 of same year. Took charge of a church in East Aurora, N.Y. for a time, and from there come to Northern Michigan, August 8, 1888. Was at Riverside and a few weeks later came to Lake City.

# [Lake City and Falmouth: Roman Catholic Circuit]

[Roman Catholic priest] LOUIS STEVEN ALEXANDER BAROUX, [whose territory includes Missaukee,] was born March 25, 1817 in the department of Sarthe, center of France. The following is a brief outline of the more important events of his life as told by himself:

During the course of my studies in 1837, the influenza was an epidemic very prevalent, and I neglected to care for myself, and for many years subsequent, my health was very delicate, and my studies were finished with difficulty. I was ordained [a] priest May 21, 1842.<sup>85</sup>

Three years later, I resolved to devote my life to foreign missions; but on account of my poor health, my Bishop refused me his permission, and not until two years later did I gain his consent. July 2nd, 1846, I embarked at Havre, in company with Rev. Father Sorin, the founder of the University of Notre Dame, Indiana. [We] Landed at New York, Aug. 12th, reached Notre Dame, Ind., Aug. 22d. I spent six months there.

March 14th, 1847, I went to Pokagon, now called Silver Creek, in Cass County, Michigan. I had 300 Indians of the Pottawatomie tribe, who were converted some ten years before. My lodging was a little cabin twelve feet square, covered with bark, without either a chair, a table, a lamp or light of any kind; with no floor and no latch or lock of any kind, for two years. After two years, some Irish families settled near, but they were very poor for several years. I had a log church that was full every Sunday; I was happy and contented.

In December, 1849, the orphans of Notre Dame lost their house by fire. Rev. Father Sorin begged of me to go to France to collect money to rebuild. I was sick with pleurisy, and so weak I did not feel able to undertake such a journey in winter, but as the keeping of the orphans depended on my answer, I resolved to go. Left New York, Jan. 3d, 1850. To try to collect money at that time in France, seemed an absurdity; there was such misery and distress. I understood the difficulty. I preached to explain what brought me over the sea; told them I did not want to bother them, as they were boundto provide for their own poor first. I would not call on them, but would receive only what they could spare and bring to the parish priest. This way of begging pleased everyone. I returned to America in May, 1851, with \$3,700. for the orphans.

I then expected to live and die in America, but I was sadly disappointed. In September 1852, I was appointed to go to Asia to establish a mission in eastern Bengal. 500 miles east of Calcutta. I had built at Silver Creek a comfortable little house; it was like a palace to me after leaving my small hut. I was so much attached to my Indians, our separation was painful. I went to France in September, 1852; thence to London, England. There I paid \$300 for passage to Calcutta, via Cape of Good Hope; but in the Bay of Biscay we met with a terrible storm that lasted several weeks and compelled us to return to Plymouth, England, at the end of eleven weeks. I had a fever, was unable to continue the voyage, forfeited my \$300 and returned to France.

\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>85</sup> Transcript was 1942, likely a typographic error.

September 22d, 1853, I embarked at Marseilles, going via Alexandria, Cairo, Suez, Aden, and Ceylon, reached Calcutta, Oct. 31st. Nine days later, started for Dacca, reaching there Nov. 17th. The 21st we left for Noacolly, the place of our destination, arriving on the 24th. I remained there until May 1st, 1854. I had there about 600 Catholics. My house was small; was built of bamboos and covered with grass. I had no church, and on Sundays said Mass under a tree.

My next destination was Chittagon, where I found a residence and church built of brick, the latter being 145 feet long by 65 feet wide. I had about 1200 Portuguese Catholics - that country having belonged to Portugal, prior to its conquest by England. I found in that vast territory, about one million Pagans and half a million Mohammedans. On account of the divisions of caste among the natives, we are never admitted to their homes, or permitted to speak to or see their families. We had at Chittagong a Baptist minister who was a very good man and a zealous missionary. He had been there thirty-five years. I never baptized a pagan. Some pretended to want to be received; I told them to come for a while and to be prepared and instructed. I never saw them afterwards. The only religion they wanted was money. I was there in 1857 at the time of the Sepoy insurrection, when so many Europeans were murdered. For three months I never undressed, expecting to be murdered every night.

At last I had to leave that mission on account of my failing health. Out of 25 priests, in four years there were two left. I left Calcutta Nov. 1st, 1857. At the mouth of the Hoagly River, I went ashore with the captain and three sailors. On returning our boat was upset, and we were rescued with difficulty. Four of us caught a rope thrown from the ship. I was lowest, and when the others were rescued, I was under water and they thought I was gone, but when the rope was drawn in, [I was] still clinging to it, although insensible. I landed in Marseilles Dec. 12<sup>th</sup> 1857.

I returned to America in Jan. 1859, and came back to Silver Creek. I can find no words to toll the happiness my Irish and Indian congregation expressed on seeing me again after seven years' absence. That was the happiest day of my life. We built a handsome church and house. My health was poor - the result of life in India - but I had missions in four counties, and was often from home 15 days at a time. Half of my Indians moved to Rush Lake, 16 miles from Silver Creek, on account of difficulties with the chief. They had a miserable log church. In October 1862, I went to France, collected over \$1000, returned in May 1863, and built a new church.

I continued to attend all these missions until October 1870, but the long journeys broke my health, and I was removed to Ecorse, near Detroit, where I built a handsome brick house. I remained there 12 years.

In 1882, I removed to Montague, Muskegon county. I had seven places to attend, while there. Nov. 28, 1883, I was thrown from a carriage and seriously injured, losing the use of an arm for nearly a year. I moved to Muskegon, thence to Manistee, from there to Big Rapids.

In 1886 I went to Reed City. I had Evart, Hersey, Chippewa Station, Brinton, Baldwin, Chase, Ashton, Deer Lake, and Luther.

In September 1887, I received the charge of Cadillac, but came only twice a month. I was attending also Lake City, Kalkaska, Hobart, Marion, and Falmouth. In October 1888, we bought the house at Cadillac,

then built a tower and got a bell, etc, I kept all my missions. I have so much to do that I never have a full week at home to rest.

It is 34 years since I left my mission in Bengal, and I supposed I was forgotten there, but learned my mistake two years ago. They had heard my health was very good, and wrote to the Propaganda at Rome, asking to have me sent back there. I worked very hard there, and it is a great consolation to me to know that I have there yet so many faithful friends.

The Roman Catholics in this vicinity, of whom Father Baroux has the care, number about 100. Services are hold in the court room, the last Sabbath in each month.

# [Stittsville: Methodist Episcopal]

What is now known as the Stittsville circuit of the Methodist Episcopal church, or at least a part of it, was formerly attached to the Lake City charge, but was set off some four or five years ago, the first pastor being Rev. Thos. Tindall. He was succeeded by Rev. W.Z. Cole, and he by the present pastor, Rev. James H. Collins.

Classes are organized at Stittsville, Moorestown, and Excelsior in Norwich township, Pioneer in Pioneer, Cutchen in Forest, and Star City in West Branch. To the latter an Indian class is also attached. A glance at the list of appointments and location of the same will convince one that the pastor's position is no sinecure. Services are held fortnightly, at each place. The total membership is 59, of which 52 are full members, and 7 are probationers. Sunday Schools have been organized by the church at Stittsville, Moorestown, Pioneer, Excelsior, and Forest. In these schools, the officers and teachers number 34, scholars, 104. An independent Sunday School is in operation at Star City, which will probably be reorganized as an M.E. school, shortly.

On this circuit, the services are held in school houses, as yet. A neat and commodious church building is being erected at Moorestown, which will probably be ready for use early in the summer of '92. Estimated cost \$1,500. The society owns a comfortable parsonage and garden lot, at Stittsville, valued at \$500.00.

JAMES H. COLLINS, the present pastor, was born in Canada of Irish parents. Learned the printing trade, and followed it in many cities, among which may be named Toronto, Can., Chicago, Ill., Chamberlin, S.D., Omaha, Neb., New York City and Buffalo, N.Y. He spent four years in revival work in the provinces of Ontario, New Brunswick, Nova Scotia, Prince Edward's Island, and in the states of Maine and Massachusetts. At these revivals during this period, 1,000 persons professed conviction. Entered pastoral work in this state in September 1888, and spent two years at Alba and one at Ironton. During his stay at the latter place, he conducted a revival at Hilligos, one of the appointments on the charge, at which 40 persons professed conversion. As stated above, he came to Stittsville in September 1891.

## [Southwestern Missaukee: Methodist Episcopal]

APPLICATION was made on the 25th of December, 1891, to the pastor in charge of what is known as the Cadillac Circuit (ME), which covers three points in southwestern Missaukee, for material from which to write an article, but no reply was received in time to be used here. For this reason, our sketch is brief

and imperfect. The three appointments are at Lucas, Dist. No. 3 Riverside, and McBain. A cozy parsonage is located at Lucas. Sunday Schools are connected with the church at Lucas and Dist. No. 3. No church buildings. The present pastor is Rev. Robert Batterbee, who took the charge in 1890.

### [McBain: Presbyterian]

BETHANY Presbyterian church, is the title of the church at McBain, of which Rev. William J. Rainey is the pastor. The building, a neat frame structure, was dedicated in 1891, and is nearly out of debt. The membership and attendance is good, and the pastor is generally liked and respected. (Material for a more complete description, was promised, but was probably lost, en route. Ed.)

### [Dutch Reformed] 86

In addition to these, there is a flourishing Dutch Reformed church at Lucas, <sup>87</sup> which owns a comfortable church and other property.

The Reformed Church of Falmouth<sup>88</sup> has recently been incorporated, and will build a new frame church early next spring at a cost of about \$1,000. A new parsonage will also be built. Services are conducted by H. Zuidersma, who is presiding elder.

At Vogel Centre there is a Christian Reformed Church of which Rev. J. Schepers is pastor. 89

The Reformed Church Society has built a new frame church about three-fourths of a mile west of Vogel Centre. The two churches differ little in creed. <sup>90</sup> In addition to the proposed church at Falmouth, mentioned above, the last named church will erect two more church buildings, during 1892, in Clam Union township.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>86</sup> Similar to his 1917 history, Stout's lack of attention to the Dutch Reformed community, which he confesses makes up the bulk of southern Missaukee, is remarkable in its relative silence, and at points, mockery.

<sup>87</sup> Organized January 1883.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>88</sup> This is the Reformed Church in America congregation of Falmouth. Prosper Christian Reformed Church was organized in 1894.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>89</sup> This is the first congregation to organize in all of Missaukee, in 1872. It also launched the first school in Missaukee. Surprisingly, Stout chooses to place it as almost a footnote at the end of his list. Maybe he felt the Reformed community in general was too Dutch to be of any social influence for his intended audience.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>90</sup> He refers to what are now the denominations of the Christian Reformed Church (CRC) and Reformed Church in America (RCA). They still differ little in creed.



Figure 8: Vogel Center Christian Reformed Church and Parsonage, 1887, the first church in Missaukee.

# Retrospective: A Brief History of Missaukee<sup>91</sup>

PERHAPS a look back into the past history of our county may not be devoid of interest. What is here submitted is taken here and there from various sources, but its accuracy is vouched for in every instance, either by official records or eye-witnesses.

#### **Elections**

The first board of supervisors met at the "Perley Farm," about two miles northeast of Falmouth, June 6th, 1871. Present: W. J. Morey of Pioneer, James White of Quilna, Daniel Reeder of Reeder, John Vogel of Clam Union, and Henry Van Meter of Riverside. D. Reeder was elected chairman. The salaries of county officers were fixed by this board as follows: Clerk \$500; Treasurer \$250; Prosecuting Attorney \$200, Judge of Probate \$100; Sheriff, \$100. At this session the *Osceola Outline* of Hersey was designated as the official paper of the county.

Of the first election of county officers, the records in the county clerk's office tell nothing. All that can be ascertained is that sometime in the spring of 1871, prior to the meeting of the board of supervisors above mentioned, a special election was held, at which the following officers were chosen: Judge of Probate, John Vogel; Sheriff, Gillis McBain; Clerk and Register, E.W. Watson; Treasurer, Ira Van Meter;

<sup>91</sup> This historical sketch forms the foundation of Stout's more expansive 1917 history of Missaukee.

Surveyor, Abraham Stout. The circuit judge, T. J. Ramsdell of Traverse City, appointed L. H. Gage of Traverse City as Prosecuting Attorney for this county, there being no attorney here.

The first election of which we have any record, was held April 3rd, 1871, at which votes for justice of the supreme court etc., were recorded. Only 41 state tickets were counted - all Republican. The first general election on record was in November, 1872, the Grant and Greeley campaign. 119 national tickets were polled; Grant receiving 111 and Greeley 8. On the county ticket, Judge of Probate Vogel was re-elected without opposition. For Sheriff, Otto Schaap was unanimously elected. For Clerk and Register, M. D. Richardson received 84 against 49 for E.W. Watson. For Treasurer, Washington Reeder received 76; James Cavanagh, 58. For Prosecuting Attorney, Arlington C. Lewis received 97, D.A. Rice, 19; J.D. Snyder, 2. For Surveyor, B.C. Bonnell, 134; Horace Greeley, 1. Thomas T. Caldwell and Addison R. Smith were elected coroners.

The act of the Legislature organizing Missaukee county provided that the county seat should be located at Falmouth for three years, and that the location should then be decided by a vote of the people. Lake City entered the arena, and the battle was sharp and decisive. Voters were doubtless imported by both sides for the occasion, but the "Muskrat Village" was an easy winner. The election was held June 10th, 1873, the vote standing: Lake City 131; Falmouth 95; center of County, 1; total 227.

The name "Quilna," wherever it occurs in this book, should be understood to mean the territory now known as Caldwell and Bloomfield. The name was changed to Caldwell a year or two later.

#### **Otto Schaap**

Several amusing anecdotes are told of Otto Schaap (pronounced Skop), the second sheriff of this county.

At this time, John Vogel, now of Muskegon, was the acknowledged leader and great man of the Holland settlement in Clam Union. To him they went with all their troubles, and it is said some of them even swore by his name.

During Schaap's term of sheriff, he was present at an election one day, when the whiskey flowed free and some of the camp boys present were getting "Happy". One of them came up behind the Sheriff, and with a blow of his hand drove that official's high hat down over his eyes; at the same time administering a vigorous kick. Forgetting his dignity, the sheriff broke into a run towards his patron, yelling, "Yon Vogel! Oh Yon Vogel!!" at every jump, and never stopped until safe under his protection.

Another time, while Schaap was a Justice of the Peace, he issued a bill of divorce to a couple, who had found marriage a failure. While hearing this case, ho brought his fist down upon the "Compiled Laws," which lay before him, exclaiming, "There's a heap o' law in them books!" Whether this divorced (?) couple ever attempted to marry again on the strength of this separation, our informant sayeth not.

#### **Pioneer Life**

While many of the stories of pioneer life are amusing, as told now, many of their experiences were not so pleasant.

The nearest markets and post offices were Hersey on the south and Traverse City on the north. Wagon roads were scarce and nearly impassible. Provisions in many cases were carried 30 to 50 miles on men's shoulders. Furniture? They had little, except what they made. For instance, the writer remembers his childhood home in a log cabin in Richland township, in which all the furniture was made by his father and grandfather; their only tools being an ax, a drawshave, and the Yankee's never-failing jackknife.

An illustration of the pleasures of traveling in those days is submitted. Twenty-three years ago the 23d day of December, 1891, James White, now a resident of Caldwell township, was toiling on his way from Falmouth towards Muskrat Lake, along the almost impassible trail, with his family and household goods stowed in his wagon. When four or five miles from the Lake, his wagon broke down, and he pushed on for help. The inhabitants of what is now Lake City turned out in a body and assisted the emigrants to reach this place, Daniel Reeder carrying one child in his arms, through to his home. That child is now the wife of Richard M. Bielby, the present sheriff.

### John Koopman, Pioneer

To conclude our reminiscences, we present a short biographical sketch of our present Judge of Probate. He was one of the first settlers, and one of the advance guard of the colony of Hollanders who now form the bulk of the population of southern Missaukee. The trials and hardships experienced by him, is a fair sample of those endured by all the early pioneers, who came here in the '60s and early '70s:

John Koopman was born Feb. 6th, 1836, in the province of Groningen, Kingdom of Holland. Was married Jan. 1st, 1869; has a family of six children. In '69 he removed to the United States. After remaining in Grand Rapids a few weeks, he heard about what was then talked of as Clam River, (Missaukee county being not yet organized,) and with three companions set out for this region in the hope of finding homesteads.

They were told it was somewhere north of Big Rapids, but on reaching that town, could learn northing about Clam River. Being unable to speak English, so after trying different roads which led them astray, they returned to Big Rapids, where they met Hoffmeyer, a German, who told them he lived 30 miles further up the Muskegon river, but the rest of the party were discouraged and would go no farther. After their return to Grand Rapids, he again set out with one companion and reached Hoffmeyer's, a little north of the present site of Evart. From there they went to Watson's farm and finally to Clam River. In October 1869 he moved with his family to the Clam River, consuming 10 days in the journey.

Being informed there were no more homesteads, he squatted on a piece of railroad land, adjoining to John Vogel's, where he built a log house and store combined, and opened what was probably the first store in Missaukee county. Later, learning there were still homesteads, he took one on section 36, in Riverside township, clearing 50 acres. He lived there till 1879. Was township Treasurer several terms, Supervisor for 3 years, and a candidate for county Treasurer on the first Independent ticket, but was defeated by a small majority.

In 1879 he built a store in Falmouth, and the following year was elected supervisor of Clam Union. In 1881 he bought the village plat, saw, shingle, and grist mill, which ho remodeled to run by water power, by putting a dam in Clam River. In 1884, the mills were washed out, but a new flour mill was built on the

opposite bank of the river, which was burned before it was fully completed. A new one was at once built on the same site, and completed during the winter of '85. In '88 he was elected Judge of Probate. In 1890 he built a now saw and shingle mill.

# John Brink, Government Surveyor (1891)

[This article combines elements from two newspaper articles from the 1890s in order to synthesize the most complete versions of his entertaining stories. Some is in Brink's own voice.

- "Big Foot's Lovely Lake," Chicago Tribune, 27 Sep 1891.
- "John Brink, An Old Government Surveyor," The Milwaukee Sentinel, January 29, 1899. ]

## John Brink, Surveyor

John Brink, the oldest resident of Crystal Lake, McHenry County, Ill., was the government surveyor for this section of country when the vicinity of Chicago was still a wilderness. Mr. Brink possesses a remarkable memory and is an excellent story-teller, and although in his 82d year, looks almost as robust as he did twenty years ago.

His eyesight is about as keen as when he looked along the barrel of a musket in 1835 and shot a bear in the center of the forehead at a distance of 200 yards. His step is still firm, and to the observer it is apparent that his many years of rough pioneer life have done him more good than harm.

The district which Mr. Brink and his party surveyed is now covered by the States of Illinois, Wisconsin, Iowa, and Michigan.

# Chicago and Galena in 1831

importance and population.

"The first surveying I did was with Mullet in 1831 when we run the fourth principal meridian, commencing at the mouth of Fever River on the Mississippi River and running through Galena, Ill., to the Wisconsin state line. At that time Galena was quite a city of perhaps 1500 inhabitants. Its principal industry was the lead mines. It was away ahead of Chicago in

"I first saw Chicago in December, 1831. It consisted of Mark Beaubien, John H. Kinzie, Indian agent, and George W. Dole, sutler, and about 300 officers and men at old Fort Dearborn. The whole town at that time could now be stored away in some small corner of any of the Chicago's present big buildings and the room would hardly be missed.

"I began surveying before Abraham Lincoln did, although Lincoln was two years older than I. He was born Feb. 12, 1809 and I was born Jan. 12, 1811. I began to make government surveys in 1831 under the surveyor general, and Lincoln began as a deputy county surveyor under John Calhoun, of Sangamon County, Illinois, in 1833. It is the only instance in my life where I outranked Old Abe.



"He was a captain in the Black Hawk war, while in the same territory I was running township lines six miles east and six miles south of Blue Mounds, Wis. And I would have run into an ambush of Black Hawks had not Henry Gratiot, government land agent, sent his interpreter to warn us the same day on which Force was killed and Green wounded. We immediately packed our camp and made for Galena, Ill. as fast as we could, where we remained until the excitement of the Black Hawk war had abated. In the fall we returned to our work of running the township lines of Wisconsin.

#### Lake Geneva and Its Name

"From 1831 to 1836 I worked with John Mullet, another United States deputy surveyor for the Cincinnati, Ohio Land Office under Surveyor General M.T. Williams. Up to 1836 we had run the township lines over that part of Wisconsin from where Sugar River crosses the state line, north to the Wisconsin River, thence up the Wisconsin River to Fort Winnebago (now Portage); thence to Fox River and down that river to Green Bay, and thence to the point of the peninsula between Green Bay and Lake Michigan.

It was in August, 1833. that the surveyor and his men found themselves in the northern part of Illinois, and they determined to push still further to the North. One pleasant morning Mr. Brink, at the head of the party, was forcing his way through some thick under-brush when he suddenly found himself upon the bank of one of the most beautiful lakes it has ever been his fortune to look up- on.

"Previous to this I had seen many of the lakes of Wisconsin, but nothing to compare with this one in beauty." Calling his men to view the grandeur of lake Mr. Brink said: "Boys, we have found one of the prettiest lakes in the United States, and we certainly must be the first white men who ever saw it or we should have heard of it before."

### **Indian Tree Tomb**

Not far from the spot where the lake was first sighted were three burr oak trees growing around a spring, and it was in the branches of two of the oaks that the Indians laid to rest one of their number the day before the stir- party arrived. The chief of the tribe of Indians who inhabited that part of the country in 1830s, called Big Foot, his only son, a lad of 14, had died a few days before and the old warrior was almost heart-broken when death took his boy from him. He would not allow his braves to place the body of the boy under-ground. he determined to distinguish his son's burial from that of others of the tribe, and his warriors were instructed to make a strong coffin for the body.

A large black-walnut tree was cut down, and from its trunk, a log ten feet long was obtained. From this log, a unique coffin was made. It was split in two and a place large enough to contain the corpse and all of the dead boy's belongings was chopped out. The remains, with tile nows, arrows, knives. etc., were then placed in this coffin. Ropes made of deer-skin were used to tie the affair together.

It was at this spring--Three Burr Oak Spring--directly under the place where the coffin was in the branches of the trees, that Mr. Brink and his surveying party ate their first meal after reaching the lake. "A romantic resting place in a lovely spot, overlooking one of the most beautiful lakes in the world."

Three Barr Oak Spring is still bubbling [in 1891] as merrily as ever and the three trees still surround it. Mr. Brink in 1871 visited the spot and found the Indian coffin lashed to the limbs of the trees, almost in the same condition he had left it over thirty-five years before. It is not in the branches of the burr today, however. The was nulled a few year ago by George Reidt who lived on a farm near Porter's Point, and the arrows, knives, and other belongings of the dead Indian youth are now in the possession of the Reid family. When he opened the coffin Mr. Reid found the skeleton of the boy and everything the youth possessed when alive.

### **Naming the Lake**

"In 1835 I was running township lines in southern Wisconsin and ran a line through the lake. Our instructions were to plat all lakes, rivers and streams, and preserve all the Indian names to the same. The Indians called the lake "Big Foot" and whether the name originated with the lake or with the old Winnebago chief, of that name, I do not positively know. I am inclined to think, however, the name originated form the shape of the lake. Before the lake was dammed at the outlet its surface was about six feet lower, and its general outline was the shape of a human leg and foot. The upper end of the lake, what is now, Williams Bay, forming the knee cap, and Geneva village, the toe. At that time very little water extended into Williams Bay, and it was only a strong curve to the shore of the lake.

"Juneau, the French trader who founded Milwaukee, and who, by the way, was a personal friend of mine, said we were the first white men to see the lake. Though Juneau had seen it, he said in a jocose way he did not consider a Frenchman a white man.

"In due time I made my returns to the surveyor general's office at Cincinnati, and the chief clerk put them in his own private desk. When I made my appearance he called me into his private office, and, taking from his desk the plat I had made of Big Foot Lake, and pointing to the name 'Geneva' asked:

```
"'Is that what the Indians call that lake?'

"'No.'

"'Well, what were your instructions with regard to preserving original names?'

"'I was to carefully preserve them.'

"'What do the Indians call it?'

"'Big Foot.'

"'What right had you to change the name?'

"'None whatever.'

"'Then why did you do so?'

"'Because it was too beautiful a sheet of water to be called such an ugly name.'
```

I then launched out in an enthusiastic description of its beauties and painted the finest word picture I was capable of.

"'But why did you name it Geneva?'

"Because I was born eight miles north of Geneva at the foot of Seneca Lake, New York, and I thought it a beautiful and appropriate name for that lovely sheet of water in those Wisconsin woods.'

"Well, Brink, I was raised near there, too, and we'll let it go on the records as Lake Geneva."

#### **Dubuque**

"In 1833 I made the first government survey west of the upper Mississippi River and stuck the first government stakes in the great Northwest by surveying and staking out forty acres for the village of Dubuque, Iowa. No Spanish, no French, nor Indian land title was good with this government unless claimed prior to 1818. In 1833 heirs and creditors of the old Frenchman Dubuque were trying to get a title to a tract of land ceded in an early day by the Indians to Dubuque. The grant called for twenty-one miles up and down the river and fifteen miles back, including what is now Dubuque, Iowa. I was sent by the surveyor general to locate the boundaries of Dubuque's grant.

"I got an old Frenchman about 70 years old, who was raised by Dubuque from the time he was 5 years old, to show me the corners. Those inland were marked by big piles of stones, while those at the river were designated by large trees, among whose roots were morticed big chunks of lead. After making the survey and comparing my figures with the grant, I found the original survey a correct one. The original survey was made by Frenchmen from St. Louis, Mo. At the time I re-surveyed the grant Dubuque's bones were lying in state in a small stone house about three miles below the survey of Dubuque's village, at the mouth of Catfish River.

## **Michigan and Indians**

"In  $1838^{92}$  I went to Michigan and surveyed a strip 150 miles long and twenty-four miles wide into townships. In that tract I surveyed a reservation of 70,000 acres for the Ottawa Indians.

"During the seven years in which I surveyed for the government we frequently came in contact with marauding bands of Indians, but they gave us no trouble, unless I except one occasion, and then the trouble was of short duration.

"On arriving at camp one evening<sup>93</sup> after surveying all day we found a band of about a dozen Indians squatted on their haunches at one side of the cook's fire awaiting our return. The chief buck objected to our being in that territory and made himself quite obnoxious by entering our tent (which faced the fire with the flaps turned back)."

"He told me that the area around there was his and he wanted me to move on. I had been among the Indians enough to pick up their dialect and know what he wanted. He was an insolent fellow. and no

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>92</sup> The maps Brink's team produced in Missaukee alone show that Brink was in Michigan at least by 1837.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>93</sup> In one version of this story, it takes place in Michigan. In another, it takes place at Lake Geneva.

sooner got inside the tent than he boldly sat down upon the around and acted as if he intended to remain there until it suited his pleasure to move."

"[Stephen] Peck was in the tent when the big fellow came in and it made him more than angry when lie saw the fellow's insolence. Peck was a six-footer, with broad shoulders, and hardly knew his own strength. He was in his element when there was any excitement going on and permitted any opportunities to escape him. [He was] dare devil of a fellow who was one of the finest physical specimens of humanity I ever saw. His fingers, all the time we were 'palavering' with the buck, were itching to get hold of him.

"'Say, boss,' said Peck to me when he noticed the buck didn't propose to move on his own account, 'That fellow has been here long enough. Let me escort him to the outside.'

He was just aching to throw the buck through the door, but I didn't want to get into any trouble with the band because there were only five in our party and some of them were armed. I intended to stay on that ground, however, and knew I would have to employ heroic measures if I wished to remain and survey that part of the country. I knew if I once permitted that buck to impose upon me, he would keep me moving until he had driven me out of the country. While I was thinking as to what was best to do Peck kept pacing up and down the tent repenting: 'O, let me at him; just let me throw the critter out.'

"The chief wouldn't listen to anything I had to say, but continued to growl: 'This is my land and you will have to move on.' The fellow made me so angry that I finally made up my mind to let Peck have his fun even if it did cost us our scalps. We had built a large fire of brushwood just outside the tent door, as the atmosphere was quite cool, and the flames were leaping pretty high into the air when I said to Peck that the intruder would look better on the outside.

"I want you to throw him clear over that pile of brush,' I said to Peck. 'Don't let him drop into the fire. Send him 'way over to the other side of the brush.'

"Peck was only too glad to get an opportunity to lay violent hands upon the fellow and at once grabbed him by the nape of the neck and the seat of his buckskin breeches and rushed him to the door. And the way that buck went up into the air was actually a surprise to me. He went flying clear over the brush pile, but as the flames were leaping rather high into the air, he was badly scared and his hair was singed a little when he picked himself up after his rapid trip over the brush pile.

"'That fellow was here altogether too long,' was the only comment Peck made after the buck left his hands.

"We looked for a fight after Peck had his little sport, and I was afraid for a minute or two that our time had come. But the flying trip through the air surprised him that so much he sneaked off into the woods and his band followed. All that day, I expected to receive a volley from some of underbrush, but the Indians did not bother us in that region again."

## **Hardships of the Pioneers**

"Our surveying party had two chainmen, an axeman, a cook, a packman, and myself. We seldom camped more than two nights in one place. Our camp equipment was reduced to the barest necessities and we were not supplied with guns to defend ourselves from either wild beasts or Indians. Our expeditions would last from five to eleven months. Sometimes we had to build a cache for our supplies. They were usually made of big logs built up enclosing a hollow square, proof against both large and small animals. We had three pack horses, and our packman was kept busy moving our camp and packing our supplies from the cache to the camp. One had to be an experienced woodman to be able to do this work.

"Every other day after our work was done we would have to locate the new camp the packman and cook had made. I think I know something of the hardships of pioneer life, for I have waded through miles of swamp and on more than one occasion have had to swim streams when the ice was running.

"I think I do not exaggerate when I say I have been three months at a time without having all my clothes dry on me at one time. When we get into camp at night we are ready to eat our supper and lay down and sleep. No time to set around a campfire and dry wet clothes, and it made too much luggage to carry extra suits. You may rest assured we had no fancy smoking gowns, pajamas, or night shirts. And we did not see much of fashionable society, though we did attend one celebrated wedding, but were not given an opportunity to kiss the bride.

### An Indian Chief's Wedding

"Ku-acus-kum, the old chief of the Ottawas, must have been over 60 years old when he married a young squaw, although he had an old one about his own age, who did not look as though she enjoyed the wedding ceremonies, for she sat alone outside of the circle which enclosed the bride and groom. There were about 150 of the chief's followers present and the wedding was celebrated at the mouth of the Manistee River. We were camped on the opposite bank and when we arrived a circle of about one half of the Indians present had been formed around the chief and his young bride. One of the bucks, probably the Medicine man, went through some kind of a pow-wow and ceremony, while those in the circle danced around to their yells of 'Ki-yi,' 'Hi-yi'. They had no musical instruments of any kind, not even a drum or gourd. The old chief made us welcome, but some of the young bucks had fire-water and were getting pretty hilarious. One of our men could understand their jargon and he heard mutterings because we were there. We concluded we would be safer across the river in our own camp. So we gave the old chief and his dusky young bride a wave of the hand as a parting salute and withdrew without kissing the bride or partaking of the wedding feast. That was the first and only time I entered society while I was surveying for Uncle Sam.

### How We Celebrated July 4, 1838

"On July 3, 1838, while going through some heavy timber in advance of my men I heard something fall to the ground from a tall hemlock tree. I thought by the sound it was a rotten limb, but on closer inspection found it was an old she-bear with a cub. She was traveling in a circle around the tree and around the cub. I had heard if an animal fell on its head it would daze it so it would travel around in a circle. I supposed the crash I heard was the bear falling from the tree. I thought I would get near

enough to her to strike her over the head with my compass staff and add to her confusion, but when I saw the cub thought I had better make sure just how badly stunned she was. So I raised my staff over my head and gave as big a yell as I could. The cub went up the tree like a squirrel and the old bear raised straight up on her hind legs and showed all her ivories. I don't know which was more frightened, but I guess I was, while she was most surprised. We faced each other till the cub got at least 50 feet up the tree, when I mustered up courage and shook my staff and yelled again. At that she dropped on all fours and came straight for me, and I turned and ran, and if ever a fellow came near flying it was I. Fear reduced my weight and increased my strength, and I was soon back with the boys. When the bear found herself confronted by four yelling men she turned and disappeared into the forest. We went back to the tree where the cub was and discovered another cub in another tree. We felled the trees and killed the cubs and celebrated the glorious fourth by remaining in camp and feasting on bear meat.

"Talking with old chief Ku-a-cus-kum afterward about my adventure he told me I should never run from bear, as they would always raise their hind feet if you faced them. Keep a good knife in your hand, keep your arms high, and when the bear takes you in his paws reach over and stick your knife between his ribs. The old chief bared his breast and allowed me an ugly scar several inches long where a bear had bit him before he could kill it with his knife. He said when the old bear turned to run from us she was too badly frightened to return to her cubs."

### **Epilogue**

John Brink is still living at Crystal Lake, Ill., a hale, hearty old gentleman of 88 years. "Uncle John," as he is familiarly known to a large circle of friends and acquaintances, was until the last few years frequently employed to survey farms, villages, lots, etc. Having in his life time seen a wilderness changed to fertile, thickly populated and wealthy district, he is full of interesting reminiscences.

# **Dutch Settlement North of Muskegon 1867-1897 (c1897)**

By Josiah Meulendyke, ca 1897.

Excerpt from: Lucas, H.S., *Dutch immigrant Memoirs and Related Writings*, Eerdmans, Grand Rapids, 270-276.

#### **Preface**

Meulendyke, born in Rochester, New York, in 1849, was ordained to the ministry in the Reformed Church and served as a pastor in a number of the congregations north of Muskegon and Grand Rapids. His account, written in 1897 and preserved in manuscript, kept in the Netherlands Museum, was first published in *Michigan History*, XXXI (1947).

## **History**

The writer of the following sketch disclaims any special qualification for the work allotted to him. Although as classical home missionary in Michigan closely identified with the localities in northern Michigan for a year or two, he has in no sense been a pioneer. Hence he must depend upon the observation and experience of others quite as much as upon his own. He wishes to acknowledge his indebtedness to the following individuals: Domine Jan Hoekje, of Fremont, Michigan; Mr. Hendrik de Bree, of Vogel Center; Dominie Herman van der Ploeg, of New Era; Jan Scholten, of Lucas; and Dominie Willem Pool, of Atwood.

It is a curious fact in the history here under review that when, thirty or twenty years ago, new schemes of colonization were agitated among our Holland people of Michigan, the remote south and far west of the United States found greater favor than the near north. This appears particularly striking when we reflect that the Dutch colonies in southern Michigan had passed the experimental stage of their existence, and pioneer life in the north, though in many ways similar, could hardly prove to be as difficult as it had been in the south. But the lonely woods and virgin soil of northern Michigan were bound to attract the attention of the Hollanders living in the Dutch colonies of Michigan. And so today the Dutch settler in the north asserts his kinship with the Dutch colonists to the south. But the mention of kinship suggests a striking difference. The colonies of Hollanders in Ottawa and adjacent counties grew up under special circumstances. Some were planted close together and so in the course of a few years formed compact settlements. On the other hand, some of the larger settlements are offshoots of earlier Dutch colonies. The settlements of northern Michigan, however, sprang up independently of each other, and so no two of the colonies mentioned in this article bear the relation of mother and daughter. Except as they resemble each other somewhat, because of common social, geographic, and economic factors, no two are sisters of each other. In point of territorial separation also they are remotely related.

#### **Fremont**

The honor of priority in the forming of these new Dutch settlements belongs to Fremont, formerly known as Fremont Center, situated in Newaygo County on the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad.

The first Hollander to settle in those parts was Frank Boone, formerly a resident of Muskegon. Making his way through the woods, he arrived at his destination in August 1867. At that time, what now is the flourishing town of Fremont had scarcely attained the minor dignity of a hamlet. Three weeks later he was followed by Cornelius Addison, a Zeelander it is believed, and J. Wieringa, also from Muskegon. People of other nationalities had already settled in this region, and so the Hollanders who now arrived profited from their example and made this colonization a success.

At this time the lumber industry of Muskegon was in a flourishing condition, giving employment to a large number of Hollanders. Many of these longed to exchange their lot for the more independent one of the farmer. As there was a considerable amount of land around Fremont obtainable at reasonable prices, it was natural that those Hollanders who had already settled there should inform their friends and relatives in Muskegon about opportunities at Fremont. Among them the first were Abel Kuizinga, Aart van Arendonk, Cornelius Achterom, and Klaas Zuidema, all of whom were Groningers. In course fo time, as the settlement attracted the attention of people living in older Dutch communities, many others arrived and cast their lot with the pioneers Newaygo County. Their ranks were further swelled by immigrants who came directly from the Old Country. And so within a few years Fremont increased in population and material prosperity.

True to their traditions, these Hollanders did not delay to provide for themselves public worship in their own tongue and after their own desires. In the first meeting called for this purpose on March 3, 1869, a congregation was formed. Dominie W.A. Houbolt, pastor of the First Reformed Church of Muskegon, directed the services. Their faith in the future of their settlement and their desire to lead Christian lives is revealed by the fact that in that very meeting it was decided to petition the Classis of Michigan of the Reformed Church to effect an organization in the near future. This was achieved on June 14, 1869, when seven adults and seventeen communicants agreed to this step. Dominie Mannes Kiekintveld was the first pastor. But ecclesiastical strife and denominational rivalry made themselves felt here as elsewhere. A Christian Reformed congregation was formed in 1882 of which Jacob Noordewier served as the first pastor. A second church of the same denomination had been formed some six miles southwest of Fremont.

Although all improved land, which sells at about \$40 per acre or less in the vicinity of Fremont, is in the hands of the farmers, land held by people not of Dutch origin is constantly being offered for sale and bought by Hollanders. As the Hollanders already have a share in the business enterprises, it is clear that the Holland settlement at Fremont has not yet reached its limits. The Dutch population at Fremont now numbers from 250 to 300 families.

# **Vogel Center**

Next in order of settlement is Vogel Center. This flourishing community is situated in Missaukee County about one hundred miles nearly due north of Grand Rapids. The nearest railroad station is McBain on

the Toledo, Ann Arbor, and Northern railroad, eight miles due west. In 1868<sup>94</sup> a number of individuals in the mother colony who desired more room for themselves were attracted to desirable lands in northern Michigan available as homesteads. In that year, Jan Vogel, Hendrik Westvelt, and Jan Zager set out to view this country. Soon they were followed by Vogel's brother-in-law, Gerrit Herweijer, Jan Abbing, and Fred Banis, an unmarried man who ultimately went blind and returned to the Old Country. Satisfied with what they had observed, they secured claims in this land of promise. On their return they interested others and so in the spring of 1869 the axes of Dutch pioneers resounded in the lonely woods of Missaukee County. Without any railroad connection with Holland or Grand Rapids, travel to Missaukee County was possible only in ox wagons along primitive roads cut through trackless forests.

The giants of the forests had to be converted into logs before shelters could be built. Clearings had to be made with great labor before a scanty harvest could be coaxed from the soil. For supplies, Grand Rapids was the Egypt most accessible whence anxious Jacobs could secure supplies for their families. The settlers at Vogel Center experienced frontier hardship like those of the colonists of Ottawa County.

Many a homemaker, fearing the privations of the forests land the heavy labor necessary to clear the land, was frightened away from Michigan. But these very forests have proved the salvation of many an enterprise. Where the soil is slow to yield grass and grain, trees abundantly make up for this deficiency. The ax in winter brought better results than the plow in summer. And the lumber camps, which always hovered in the forests along the edge of new settlements in northern Michigan, afforded better markets for farm produce than the cities and villages of communities that had passed out of the pioneer stage.

These considerations also apply to the pioneers of Vogel Center. Although at first dependent for supplies upon Grand Rapids, they were not dependent upon that city for markets. The rivers that carried their logs to distant sawmills in Muskegon frequently were a source of greater return than the railroads. The farther these settlers were removed from railroads the better prices they received for their produce. And so the colony prospered, for new settlers kept coming and the Dutch settlement expanded on every side.

Thus Falmouth, four and a half miles northwest of Vogel Center and on Clam River, a branch of the Muskegon, came into existence. It has a general store, sawmill, and church. Moddersville, a place five and a half miles northeast of Vogel Center, was founded by Wynand Modders. He emigrated from the Old Country in 1872 that his two oldest sons might avoid military service. A butcher by trade, he lived in Harlingenin in Friesland. For five years he ran a grocery in Grand Rapids and in 1877 settled on a homestead of pine and hardwood timberland. Their first home was a log shanty fourteen by twenty-two feet which could scarcely accommodate their large family, originally of seventeen children, some of whom, however, no longer were with their parents. Modders became the community's first postmaster in 1890. In these newly founded settlements life is more primitive than in Vogel Center. The Americans usually vie with the Hollanders in securing possession of such good land as might be found in the community. Between Falmouth and Moddersville lies East Falmouth [later Prosper], center of a growing

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>94</sup> Meulendyke's dates are off by a year. The men filed claims in 1867, and settled in 1868. Notably, Meulendyke's work here was edited and published in the same HS Lucas book in which Lucas edits the dates within John Vogel's diary. Lucas (mistakenly) believed the Vogel party settled in 1869 due to a typographical error.

farming community on good farming land, where a church building and parsonage lend some dignity to the country.

The first church of the Christian Reformed denomination, at Vogel Center, was formed in 1872. In 1877, the Christian Reformed people built a church which still serves as their place of worship. In 1870, Dominie Mannes Kiekintveld of the Reformed Church had preached at Vogel Center and administered baptism, but his labors were without results for the Reformed Church. But finally, in 1890, a Reformed congregation was organized, followed in 1891 by two others, one at Falmouth and another at Moddersville. At present these three churches are served by the same pastor, who resides at Falmouth where a parsonage has been built for him.

About two hundred families constitute the population of Vogel Center. The unimproved land of that community, though extensive, is worthless for farming; and as only few of the farms admit of division, it would appear that Vogel Center will soon reach the limits of its populations, though not of its wealth.

#### **New Era**

New Era, a Dutch Settlement in Oceana County near the shore of Lake Michigan about thirty miles northwest of Muskegon on the Chicago and West Michigan railroad, was founded in 1878. With but one exception, all its first settlers came from Montague, a lumber town a few miles to the south, where they were employed as mill hands. The only exception is Meus Hulsebos, whose record as a pioneer deserves special notice. He began his frontier life near Zeeland in Ottawa County. Later he joined Dominie Albertus C. van Raalte, Mrs. Sprik, and others in the Virginia enterprise and settled at Chule in that state. Failing where so few succeeded, he returned with the scant remains of his investment and settled in New Era, where he is living at the present time. The names of the other first settlers are Hendrik Westveld, Berend van den Berg, Otto Bolt, Herman van der Ven, and Frank Veltman.

At first the land, much of which was of a good quality, was cheap. There was a ready market for logs, kiln wood, and bark so that the colony grew rapidly, encouraged by some emigration from the Old Country. At the present moment this community comprises eighty-five families. Further, New Era is situated in the fruit belt of Michigan, and the Hollanders were not slow to take advantage of this activity, which they saw would ultimately prevail. Many Hollanders own large peach orchards. Improved land at present is worth from \$25 to \$40 per acre.

As soon as the first log houses were built, religious services were held in the Dutch language. Hulsebos was the leader of these people, a pioneer exhorter common enough among our pioneer Hollanders. Later, when the question of church affiliation came up, the majority were inclined to join the Christian Reformed Church, and an organization was effected in 1884. Later, in 1894, because of differences in this congregation, a Reformed Church was organized.

#### Lucas

Lucas, situated in the southwest corner of Missaukee County and extending into Wexford County to the west, was founded in 1882, fourteen years after Vogel Center. It lies six miles southeast of Cadillac, and handsome city with which it is connected by the Toledo, Ann Arbor, and Northern railroad.

First to establish themselves in this locality were Harm Lucas and his sons Abraham, Dick, Simon, Henry, and Thomas; Hendrik Koel; Jan Loeks; Ralph van Wieren, Jan Slaar; Hendrik Klomparens; Jan Harm Pel; Jan Bode; and Horace Doll. Harm Lucas and his group all came from Graafschap, being driven by the desire for more room and for cheap land. They were followed soon after by Jan H. Eppink from Allegan, Jan Scholten from Overisel, Josua Elenbaas from Beaverdam, and Pieter van den Bosch from Zeeland.

Nearness to Cadillac proved advantageous from the start of the settlement, especially when the railroad was extended through the settlement. This quickened the hopes of the settlers, roused their energies; and soon the whistle of a sawmill and the sound of a shingle mill rose in the silent forest. Dwellings were erected near the railroad station, and the local merchant began to compete with his neighbors in Cadillac. But progress has been unsteady, and Lucas never became more than a hamlet. On the other hand, the farmer who at times worked in the woods improved his condition. Accordingly, land which originally sold at \$7 per acre improved until at the present time it sells at about \$20. The total number of Dutch families in Lucas is between 150 and 200. The oldest church organization is Christian Reformed, but a Reformed Church was organized in 1890.

#### Atwood

Finally the last Dutch settlement in northern Michigan that remains to be noticed is Atwood in Antrim County about two hundred miles north of Grand Rapids, a few miles west from Central Lake, and a station on the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad. This, the northernmost Dutch settlement east of the Mississippi, was begun in 1882 and 1883. Some of the Hollanders living near Jamestown in Ottawa County were attracted to this land of promise. The first to move to Antrim County were Maarten van der Schouw, Jan Smallegang, Jellies Elzinga, Jacob Klooster, Melle Klooster, Jan Boss, Matthias Struik, Hendrik Wassenaar, and Egbert van der Streek.

As in the case of Fremont, the Hollanders were not the first pioneers in these parts, for other people had preceded them in settling this region. Nevertheless, plenty pioneer experiences were in store for them. In Antrim situated so far north, the winters were long and severe, summers short and cool. But the new settlement offered opportunities, especially in raising apples. Further, the air is bracing and malaria is absents. The Hollanders, now approximately fifty families, accordingly prospered; improved land is now valued from \$30 to \$40 per acre. Religious services were first held in 1886, and a Reformed Church was organized three years later.

# **Daniel Reeder Memoirs (1897)**

Plus, Agnes Reeder Ransom's childhood memories of immigration.

[Dan Reeder's memoirs first appeared in the *Plain Dealer*, May 19, 1897. They were republished as the first installment of "Some Facts of Missaukee County in The Early Days," *Missaukee Republican*, Lake City, Mich., February 20, 1936. The other installments were largely Mary Reeder's 1902 paper.]

#### Introduction

The following is a biographical sketch of Daniel Reeder relating the circumstances pertaining to his first visit to the site of this city and was prepared from data furnished by Mr. Reeder himself (published in the *Plain Dealer* May 19, 1897) and facts given by his daughter Agnes (Mrs. Agnes Ransom of Lake City, Mich.)

# [Reeder Family Background]

Daniel Reeder was born in Newmarket, York county, Canada, June 24, 1833. In 1836 the family moved to Oakwood, Victoria, Canada. On Feb. 15, 1855, Mr. Reeder was married to Elizabeth Bateman and to this union five children were born: Agnes (now Mrs. Agnes Ransom), Orilla (now Mrs. Orilla Ostrander), George E. Reeder of Duluth, Minn., John C. Reeder of Foster, Calif., and Miss Lizzie Reeder who died June 20, 1878. 95

# [Exploring Missaukee]

In the autumn of 1867, Mr. Reeder came to Big Rapids, Mich., and remained through the winter.

On May 1, 1868, he and four others organized themselves into a company to come to Missaukee county to look for homes. They came with a team as far as McDonald's [lumbering] camp on the Clam River, a mile and a half below Falmouth, Mich. That was the end of the road. From there they walked, the company arriving at Muskrat lake (now known as Missaukee Lake) May 12, [1868] and stayed all night on its bank.

Next day, Mr. Reeder looked the adjoining country over and the party returned to the team. During that night he fully determined to locate [that is, file a claim,] beside Muskrat lake. In the morning he told his companions his decision, and they laughed at the idea and tried to dissuade him, but without avail. They divided their provisions, he taking his share and two blankets, and prepared to start when the owner of the team said that he couldn't see Reeder go alone, so it was arranged with the rest that the latter were to go to Houghton Lake with the team and Reeder and his companions would come back and look Muskrat lake country over more thoroughly. This was done.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>95</sup> This date seems late. Elizabeth does not appear in the 1870 census, and histories suggest Daniel immigrated with only four children. Could she have been left behind in Canada with a relative? An Elizabeth Ann Reeder appears on the 1871 Canadian census.

# **Filing Claims**

Next morning, both decided to locate here on section six, and at sunrise they departed, Mr. Reeder going to Traverse City on the night of May 17, 1868, Mr. Reeder, on the 18th located the north half of section six. <sup>96</sup>

From there he returned to Big Rapids on foot (this being the only mode of travel at the time) and met the other four men who had just returned from Houghton Lake with a half a cheese box full of fish.

June 16th, the five reinforced now by William Reeder, a brother of Daniel Reeder, arrived back at Muskrat lake with the team and wagon. Next afternoon they cut logs and put up a shanty of about 14x20 feet, one-story high which was the first building of any kind built by a white man on or near Muskrat lake (now known as Lake Missaukee). In the afternoon they looked up a location for each of the others, but that night two of them decided to go back from where they came, and the next morning three of them started for Traverse City.

On reaching there, William Reeder located his land but the other two went back without locating any.

The brothers, Daniel and William Reeder, remained here during the summer and in the fall [1868] returned to Canada, returning here again in October, accompanied by Daniel Reeder's children and his [other] brother Washington Reeder.

# **Agnes Reeder's Memories**

The following is a narrative of the trip from Canada to Lake City as given by Daniel Reeder's daughter Agnes (now Mrs. Agnes Ransom):

Sometime in October of 1868 my father decided to go back to Muskrat Lake, so we hurriedly made preparation and left for Traverse City, which was the nearest place to purchase any provisions at that time.

We landed in Traverse City on Monday, and after getting a good meal and much preparation (buying of provisions, etc.), we decided to leave for the remainder of the journey Tuesday morning.

Early Tuesday morning we left Traverse City with a little one-horse cart carrying our provisions, and the children, Uncle Washington Reeder and father walking. It was an interesting trip for some but not for me, as I was not used to walking, and during the day my poor tender feet began to swell and by night they were swollen quite badly, so we stopped at Mayfield (about 10 miles southeast of Traverse City) at a Mr. Wilson's home, staying there Tuesday evening and all day Wednesday.

Thursday morning, we again started out on our trip, and after considerable walking, we decided to camp in the wilderness Thursday night. Sitting around the fire that night everyone was happy, thinking of their new adventure and of the new home we were going to. Father telling us children all about it and the wonderful lake nearby.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>96</sup> The US Tract Books indeed show that Daniel Reeder filed on 18 May 1868.

After traveling all day Friday, we finally arrived at Mr. Richardson's home in Pioneer township late that evening, where we decided to spend the evening.

Saturday morning, we left bright and early, the children being all excited thinking of our new home which we expected to reach that day, and about noon we arrived to it.

# Memoir of John Vogel, Immigrant and Pioneer (1906)

# **Background of the Diary**

[Jan Vogel was one of the first homesteaders in Missaukee county, and led a colorful life both before and after his time there.

Vogel kept dairies through his life, detailing his adventures and business dealings in leather-bound books. In the last year of his life he wrote this summary memoir (in Dutch) for his family. He died 23 September 1907.

The diary was translated into English for the family in 1931, by Benjamin G. Oosterbaan, of Muskegon, Michigan.

In 1946, Henry Lucas published an edited version in *Michigan History* magazine that was shorter than the original, ending about the year 1883. Lucas smoothed the English translation, summarized details as he understood them, and truncated the tale presumably because Vogel's adventures after Missaukee largely report his business dealings out of state. Still, it's a glimpse into the lumbering industry that once dominated Michigan and beyond.<sup>97</sup>

Lucas included the shorter *Michigan History* version of 1907 obit Vogel's memoir in his 1955 compilation of primary sources and general history of Dutch immigration, *Netherlanders in America*. 98

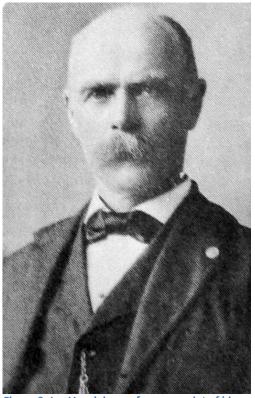


Figure 9: Jan Vogel; image from a reprint of his 1907 obituary a 1965 issue of the *Waterfront*.

At some point, maybe in the 1960s, Fred C. Hirzel obtained a copy of Oosterbaan's original translation from Jan Vogel's granddaughter, Bess Robinson of Grand Haven, daughter of Derkje Vogel Baker. Hirzel

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>97</sup> [Michigan History Magazine, Vol. 30 No. 3, July-September, 1946, Published Quarterly by the MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION, Lansing, Michigan.]

<sup>98 [</sup>Lucas, H.S., Netherlanders in America, University of Michigan Press, 1955.]

typed it out, also including the truncated material which covers Jan Vogel's later years. He also included an obituary on Jan Vogel.<sup>99</sup>

This version was transcribed from photocopies 2013 and updated in 2016 by Steven Koster, using the various sources named above. Transcriber notes are in brackets.]

# Foreword from Michigan History Magazine

The coming of European immigrants to our country is an important theme in the history of the United States. The settlement of many thousands of Netherlanders along the western shore of Lake Michigan in Ottawa, Allegan, Muskegon, Newaygo, Kent, Kalamazoo, Oceana, and Missaukee counties has been a noteworthy factor in the development of the state. Interesting is the fact that this is the largest settlement of Hollanders ever made in the United States. Its history has never been adequately explored, the fascinating account of the struggles and labors of these sturdy settlers has never been properly told. 100

John Vogel, whose reminiscences are presented here, was one of the Netherlanders whose name deserves to be remembered for it was due to his activities that the extensive settlement of Hollanders east of Cadillac, in Missaukee County, first came into existence. <sup>101</sup> Born in the Netherlands in the province of South Holland in 1839, he migrated fifteen years later to the Dutch colony which had been established in the year 1847. He settled in the hamlet of Noordeloos, about five miles northwest of Holland, named after the place in which he had come, a group of immigrants who like himself helped to clear the dense hardwood forests, build homes, and serve the new community of Hollanders in the New World and become good American citizens.

Vogel's reminiscences, originally written in the Dutch language, are based upon memory and upon notes apparently taken in connection with his many business activities. This little memoir was subsequently translated by Benjamin G. Oosterbaan in 1937 and a copy of it deposited with the Netherlands Museum of Holland, Michigan. It is with the permission of Mr. Willard Wichers, Director of the Museum, that we are able to publish this little life sketch.

These reminiscences vividly portray the activities of an energetic immigrant Hollander and help us to form some idea of how such immigrants made their careers in the new world. Like many other

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>99</sup> [Photocopies of Hirzel's typed transcription can be found in the Michigan state archives (seekingmichigan.org), or in the Fred C. Hirzel Collection, found in various public libraries around Michigan.]

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>100</sup> At least in English. There is a good popular account in Dutch which unfortunately has long been out of print and is scarcely to be found in our libraries. This is *De Pelgrim Vaders van het Westen* (Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1886), by the Dutch journalist Dingman Veersteg. A scholarly account may be found in J. Van Hinte's *Nederlanders in Amerika*, Een Studie over Landverhuizers in de 19e en 20ste Eeuw in de Vereenigde Staten van Amerika, 2 vols. (Groningen, 1928). [Van Hinte's work was translated into English and reprinted in one volume as *Netherlanders in America*, Baker, Grand Rapids, 1985. Notably, H.S. Lucas himself published a history by the same title (Lucas, H.S., *Netherlanders in America*, University of Michigan Press, 1955.). Lucas' work not only appeared in English first, it was written by a native, while Van Hinte was a visitor from the Netherlands.]

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>101</sup> For some data on the early history of Missaukee County, see G.S. Stout's *The Story of a Year in Missaukee County* (Lake City, Michigan, 1891). [A substitute might be Stout's monograph *The History of Missaukee County* as found in the "F.C. Hirzel Collection" of papers, available in several Michigan libraries.]

Hollanders, Vogel served honorably in the Civil War. He explored the wilderness, and engaged in the business of lumbering, finally, in 1869, he settled in Missaukee County where the community of Vogel Center perpetuates his memory. This settlement has steadily expanded until at the present time it occupies several townships. In 1881 he moved to Muskegon where he entered into the employ of one of the more important lumber companies. Being a skilled and reliable workman, he proved so invaluable to his firm that they sent him on important business trips. His death in Muskegon on September 25, 1907, marked the passing of one of the significant Hollanders whose labors, closely interwoven with the Dutch life of western Michigan, merit the attention of all who are interested in the history of immigration from The Netherlands to Michigan.

## **MEMOIRS OF JOHN VOGEL**

### [Born in Netherlands]

Frans Vogel, my father, was born August 15, 1804, in the province of South Holland, in The Netherlands. My mother was Derkje Beesemer, also born in The Netherlands; but I never knew her, for she died when I was only two years old. My father married Geertruide Van Weenen in 1843, that being his second marriage.

I was born at Giessen Nieuwkerk in the province of South Holland, on September 8, 1839. From my sixth to my eighth year I attended school at Giessen Oudkerk. My parents moved to Noordeloos, a town situated nearby in the same province, where I continued my schooling until my twelfth birthday. During some of these years we experienced severe poverty because of the sickness of my father as well as the generally difficult times.

When I was twelve I began to help my father support the family. After about six months I secured a position in a carpenter's shop as an apprentice. This step was undertaken with the aid and encouragement of my father who wanted me to learn the useful trade of carpentering. The shopkeeper's name was Hermanus Diepenhorst who, like our family, lived at Noordeloos. The contract made with him provided for an apprenticeship of three years. It was agreed that my parents were to provide my food and clothing during the first year, that I was to earn my board during the second year, and that during the third year I was to receive such compensation as my ability warranted.

#### [Immigration to Western Michigan]

After two and a half years, when Diepenhorst emigrated with his family to Holland, Michigan, this contract came to an end. I was eager to accompany them and with Diepenhorst's help tried to persuade my parents to let me go. My father's mind had long been favorably inclined toward America but owing to his poverty he never was able to emigrate. The fact that I was his only living son filled him with apprehension. Yet after long consideration he decided to part with me, hoping that at some future time I might be able to help him go to America. He had the fullest confidence in Diepenhorst's promise to look after my welfare. Diepenhorst paid my traveling expenses, and we left Noordeloos on August 6, 1854. My father, mother, and sisters accompanied me to Gorinchem where we took passage to Rotterdam and proceeded to sail to New York, by way of Hull and Liverpool. We lost some time while in England, and as our ship was a sailing vessel, we did not arrive at New York until about September 30.

About eight days later we reached Holland, Michigan. My fifteenth birthday took place during the voyage, on September 8.

After making a brief investigation of the dense forest, we settled six miles north of Holland and named the place Noordeloos. We attacked the forest courageously but after a while our zeal vanished, and we moved to Grand Haven where we hoped to earn good wages at carpentering. But the financial reverses of the year 1856 so reduced the value of paper money that all my savings amounted to nothing. Nevertheless, Diepenhorst had hired me for the past two years at a monthly rate so that by November 1, I was able to pay everything I owed him on account of my traveling expenses from the Old Country. As I was unable to agree with him further about wages, I went to Zeeland, Michigan, where I spent the ensuing winter, remaining there till the spring of 1857. While living with a man names K. Schoenmaker that winter, I had the most important experience of my life. This adventure during my eighteenth year will outlast the annals of time, being destined for eternity. I had come to see that man's ultimate object is his Maker, that he must glorify God in every relation of life. I acquired a firm trust that God had made a covenant with me in accordance with Hosea II.

On April 1, I left for Grand Rapids, where I intended to continue my carpentering and in the meantime improve my knowledge of English. While in Grand Rapids I received my religious education at the *Afgescheiden* (or the Seceded) Kerk, later Christian Reformed Church. Soon I found employment at a shop and was paid regularly by the month. In the fall I accompanied my boss to Jamestown, Ottawa County, where I remained until the following spring, 1858.

Thereafter I worked as a carpenter for Jan Rabbers at Groningen. In this family I enjoyed the privileges of a parental home. This hospitality continued into the following year, 1859, during which time I earned a dollar a day. But Jan Rabbers fell ill during 1860 and died on August 12, being assured of a glorious reward in the Hereafter. Next to my parents I was most attached to him.

#### [Civil War Service]

The summer of 1860 was marked with the passionate struggle between the Republican and Democratic parties. In the November elections Abraham Lincoln was chosen President. In December began the great rebellion, breaking out first in South Carolina. The perfidious Democratic government in power did nothing to arrest this rebellion. Only when the just and strong administration of Abraham Lincoln began in March was any attempt made to check the uprising. I remained at my carpenter's work in spite of the fact there was much excitement throughout the entire country due to the increasing proportions of the southern rebellion. In September, 1861, Lincoln issued a patriotic call for 300,000 volunteers and at the same time asked everybody to work loyally for the preservation of the Union. With almost unbelievable dispatch did volunteers answer his call. On September 18, I and 25 other Hollanders volunteered our services, enlisting in Company D, 2nd regiment, Michigan Cavalry. Twenty-four hundred strong, we set out for St. Louis, Missouri. Thousands of loyal citizens escorted us to the depot. Many a hearty and touching parting took place---and for many, the last. Upon arrival at Detroit we were served a bountiful meal prepared for us in the Detroit and Michigan Depot. We continued our journey by way of the Michigan Central Railway to Chicago, from Chicago by way of the Alton and St. Louis Railway to Alton, Illinois, and from Alton by boat down the Mississippi River to St. Louis. Everywhere we received a hearty

reception. But as we reached the southern part of Illinois, this friendliness cooled noticeably. At St. Louis we met many colored slaves and also their inwardly blacker so-called owners—men who had soiled their bloody hands mistreating human creatures. Now these selfsame men, in an attempt to perpetuate their abominable system, were adding to their guilt by raising their soiled hands against a lawful government.

All our time at Camp Benton near St. Louis was occupied in military training. Weapons were furnished us—Colt revolvers, six shooters, and side arms, also Colt 5 revolving carbines. In February, 1862, there were about 40,000 well drilled and well equipped men in camp under General Henry W. Halleck. On the 22nd the War Department ordered these troops to proceed by boat down the Mississippi, the object being to reopen Navigation on the river to New Orleans and cut the forces of the rebellious South in two. But many long and bloody battles had to be fought before this objective could be realized.

On February 23, we landed at Commerce, Missouri, and from there as mounted forces proceeded toward Fort New Madrid where we had our first real encounter with rebel forces. After a short battle we were ordered to make camp and there we remained until the early part of March. While in that place we daily heard the heavy bombardment on Island Number Ten, and from time to time we were attacked by the rebels who still held Fort New Madrid. On March 13, we took part in a general battle under Gen. John Pope, which during the following night resulted in a retreat by the rebel forces. Pursuing them we crossed the Mississippi River into Tennessee and at Tiptonville captured 2400 of the rebel forces.

Early in April we moved down the Mississippi by boat toward Memphis, but owing to our inability to land and to our lack of provisions by the time we arrived at Pittsburg Landing on the Tennessee River, we were forced to turn back. After the Battle of Shiloh, we took part in the siege of Corinth, Mississippi, and in several other battles. In the latter part of May the 2nd Iowa and the 4th Kansas Cavalry joined us. We rode around the rebel army to Booneville, thirty miles south of Corinth. In an expedition which lasted four days we destroyed railroads, burned bridges and found Corinth abandoned. We spent most of this summer in different places in Mississippi and along the Mobile and Ohio Railroad. I took part in a battle at Blackhead on June 4, when I received a slight wound below the knees.

In September, 1862, our detachment proceeded by rail through western Tennessee to Paducah, Kentucky, where we embarked for Louisville, proceeding by ship on the Ohio River because the rebels were assembled in great numbers throughout Kentucky, and we encountered one of their forces at Elizabethtown. On October 8, we had a heavy engagement with the enemy near Perryville and in what is known at the Battle of Champlain Hills, after which the enemy withdrew to Tennessee. Early in December we and two other Cavalry regiments, the 2nd Iowa and 9th Pennsylvania moved from Nicolasville, Kentucky, to West Virginia and into eastern Tennessee, in order to destroy the Knoxville and Richmond Railroad. While at Murfreesboro in Tennessee our troops commanded by General William S. Rosecrans fought the rebels in the Battle of Stone River. Col. Samuel P. Carter also was with our command. We had several other engagements, and on Dec 31 and January 1, 1863, took many prisoners. We also burned bridges, set fire to supply depots, and captured trains loaded with provisions. This raid lasted 26 days of which 18 were spent within enemy lines. We narrowly escaped over the Cumberland Mountains by way of Frank's Gap.

Toward the close of January, 1863, we were ordered to Louisville whence we proceeded by rail to Nashville, and from there as mounted forces to Murfreesboro where we stayed until March. Then we moved to Franklin, Tenn., the enemy facing our forces during all this time. We engaged in many skirmishes, including those at Spring Hill and Columbia. In July we advanced with the entire army corps known as the Army of the Cumberland and moved through the center of Tennessee, the object being to capture Chattanooga. On July 27, we fought a desperate battle at Shelbyville, captured the place, and took many prisoners. Thence we proceeded to Pollahoma and Winchester in spite of heavy rains which forced us to find shelter in the corn and cotton fields. During the nights we slept in mud and water covered fields. Finally we arrived at Bridgeport, Alabama, on the Tennessee River. At this place our cavalry forced a crossing. Our sharpshooters and artillery held back the enemy on the opposite bank while we swam for a half mile across the river. A pontoon bridge was constructed which enabled a large part of our army to cross. Next we moved upon Rome, Ga., where we found the enemy under Gen. James Longstreet strongly entrenched and ready for battle. Our rations at this time for the most part consisted of large sweet potatoes. Two Hollanders were taken prisoner; one of them Albert de Groot of Vriesland, Michigan, died in Andersonville prison.

We were forced to draw back and after strenuous marches day and night, during the forenoon of September 19, arrived at the battlefield of Chicamauga where the struggle continued with fury during the following day. We were stationed on the right wing and lost many of our men. Our own together with other cavalry forces had much difficulty when toward evening they tried to stem the retreating army and their wagon trains. The night fortunately was dark, which made their task easier. The next forenoon we arrived at Chattanooga. The rebels next took up positions on Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge. Hardly had we crossed the river when the rebel cavalry under Gen. Joseph Wheeler appeared, attacking our rear and completely destroying our wagon trains. Our army and all our cavalry pursued them and captured a few prisoners. After one of the battles I and 19 other under a flag of truce went within the enemy's lines remaining there for an hour and a half, talking and eating. Next day we again pursued them and took a few prisoners and continued following them until we approached Florence, Alabama, when we returned in the direction of McMinnville, Tenn. And from that place by way of Kingston went to Knoxville, Tenn., the eastern part of which was occupied by Gen. James Longstreet. We fought many other battles in that vicinity during the fall and winter also farther east in Tennessee, among them Strawberry Plains, Mossy Creek, Sevierville, New Market, and some others.

On March 29, 1864 I reenlisted with many others for another period of three years, or for the duration of the war. I was granted a 30-day furlough, and immediately left to visit my friends in Michigan. At the expiration of my furlough I reported for duty at Jackson, Michigan, and was ordered to Nashville. Arriving there, I was sent to Franklin where the rebel cavalry was opposing us. Our cavalry was ordered to pursue them to Huntsville, Alabama, following the course of the Tennessee River in order to intercept, if possible, the rebel army under Gen. John B. Hood while Gen. William T. Sherman was continuing for his famous March to the Sea.

On October 7, 1864, I received a gunshot wound in the forehead, three inches above my right eye. I fell from my horse but was assisted to safety. My wound, cleansed and treated by a skillful regimental surgeon, healed so rapidly that in the following month I was able to report for duty in my regiment. At

that time, we were daily forced to retreat before the rebel army under Gen. John B. Hood. There were many cavalry clashes until on November 30, 1864, a general engagement began in which at about 3 p.m. a musket ball passed through my left leg four inches above the ankle. Together with my good Dutch friend Martin de Groot who was slightly wounded, I rode 14 miles on horseback that same evening and lodged for the night at the home of a rich planter, quite against his wishes; but with weapons in our hands we made him see that in this case might was right. We ordered his colored slaves to bring food for us. The following morning, we proceeded toward Nashville, four miles distant but experienced great difficulty in riding because of our wounds. At Nashville we surrendered our horses and were consigned to a hospital in which hundreds of soldiers were resting, who had been wounded in the engagements around Franklin. The city of Nashville at this moment was surrounded by a rebel army while our forces stationed within were endeavoring to hold it.

When it became necessary to find room for the more seriously wounded who were constantly being brought in, we were transferred to Louisville. After a stay of two weeks in that place it again became necessary to make room for newcomers injured in the three-day battle before Nashville. I was placed on a boat destined for Keokuk, Iowa; but arrived at Cairo, Illinois. My wound assumed a most serious aspect as gangrene was developing. I was transferred to Post Hospital, losing during the transfer all my battle mementos—a hat, socks, boots, all marked with bullet holes.

My wound did not heal, in fact became worse so that it seemed that amputation might become necessary. But the splendid care I received contributed decisively to my recovery so that toward the close of March, I was transferred to Detroit. I was obliged, however, to use crutches during the summer. On August 1, 1865, after the war had come to an end, I received my discharge while in Harper Hospital in Detroit. Immediately after the Battle of Perryville in 1862 I had been made a corporal, and shortly thereafter was promoted to the rank of sergeant. For two weeks I remained with friends at Zeeland and vicinity, and on August 25 left for New York. I wanted to see my parents, sisters, and other relatives in the Netherlands. I arrived in Rotterdam on September 8, 1865, that day being my birthday. The next day I reached my parent's home at Noordeloos and learned that my brother-in-law had passed away two days before.

#### [Return to Michigan]

With my parents I remained until the close of September and left for Hull, England, where, it had been agreed I was to meet my parents and sister who intended to emigrate to America. We sailed from Liverpool, and after a voyage of 17 days reached New York, and finally, travelling directly to Michigan, arrived at Noordeloos. I had paid all the transportation expenses of my parents, my sister, and my brother-in-law, Arie Hoekwater. I at once purchased five acres of land near Noordeloos, acquired a half share in a small steam sawmill, and built a home.

My financial condition during this year, until January 1, 1866 was as follows:

September 1854, My immigration debt	\$56.00
May 1, 1855, My immigration dept	\$56.00
May 1, 1856, my immigration debt	\$36.00

December 1, 1856, Indebtedness due me	\$ 8.00
(This amount was never paid me)	
April 1, 1857 To Grand Rapids with cash	\$2.00
September 18, 1861, when I enlisted I had about	\$600.00
August 15, 1865, after discharge from service	\$1500.00
October 15, 1865, after trip to Netherlands	\$900.00
April 1, 1866, after purchase of land, buying	
Mill, and building mill, in debt	\$200.00

With my own hands, I constructed a grist mill in the sawmill and operated it in that same year. On Feb. 9, 1867, the mill burned down, which left me owning only the house and a parcel of land, and besides a debt of \$200.00. On June 23, I was married and continued working as a carpenter, which trade I had once taken up after the mill burned. But I felt I was rich although not in money or other possessions.

### [Settling Missaukee]

By this time Ottawa County was thickly settled by Hollanders, and there was much demand for farming land. Many of our people began to discuss the advisability of opening up new settlements, mention being made especially of good government lands north of Big Rapids, Michigan. There was much discussion of the subject; meetings were held and it was decided that as I possessed more knowledge of forests and had more experience in seeing lands, I should inspect the area proposed for settlement. Three other persons were chosen to accompany me, to serve as companions and help me in passing judgment upon the quality of the land to be visited.

Early in October 1867, we started in a wagon for Big Rapids and Hersey. From Hersey we went on foot northeast on the Middle Branch and Clam Rivers, which to our party appeared excellent for farming. After two weeks we returned and made our report. This task being finished, I went to Grand Haven, walking all the way, proceeded by boat to Manistee, walked from Manistee to Traverse City where on November 7, 1867, together with three other persons—the first white people to do so—we took up homesteads in Missaukee County. Next we traveled afoot from Grand Traverse to Missaukee County, 60 miles distant, through a dense forest without a road to follow. From there we went on foot back to Noordeloos, there being no railroad or other means of transportation in that section of the county at that time.

\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>102</sup> [Government homestead records show Alson Ferris filed a claim in what is now Pioneer (24N, 7W, sect. 34, SW1/4) on 5 October 1867, receiving a deed in 1874, apparently becoming the first homesteader. Records also confirm the date of Vogel's claim, 7 November 1867, for township 21N 06W, section 20, SE ¼. Henry Westveld, a "Lucas Dewart," and Henry Zagers also filed claims, and Abbing did so a few days later. See Koster, Steven, "The Earliest Settlers of Missaukee," 2016, and the United States Bureau of Land Management Tract Books, 1800-c. 1955; pal:/MM9.3.1/TH-1942-32488-11753-53 ]

On April 6, 1868,<sup>103</sup> with my wife and one child Derkje, my wife's brother Jakob [Herweyer], and his sister Eiftje, Hendrik Zagers and his wife, Hendrik Westveld, and Jan Abbing,<sup>104</sup> I left for Missaukee County, using wagons as conveyance. It was not until April 18 that my family arrived at our destination after travelling twelve days in an old wagon drawn by a yoke of oxen.<sup>105</sup> We arrived with two borrowed wheels, the old wagon having broken down several times during the journey. We camped along the road as we proceeded northward. We had purchased \$30.00 worth of provisions in Big Rapids.

When we arrived at our homestead, the southeast quarter of Section 20 Township 21 north, Range 6 West, Missaukee County, we build log shanties on our homestead property, planted some potatoes and corn, and were happy. On Sundays we met and read sermons and passages from the Bible and sang psalms. During the following fall my wife's parents and my own parents followed us and so our settlement grew. Repeatedly, along with others, I had to travel through the woods for 60 miles to Traverse City in order to take up more land. Soon I became interested in pine lands, and frequently camped in the woods. I hired a man to cut down my forest, clear the land during the summer, and put in crops during the fall.

In 1874 I drafted a petition to organize the Township of Clam Union, which proved successful, at the same time Reeder and Riverside Townships also were organized. In the spring of 1872 I was elected supervisor, justice of the peace, and highway commissioner of Clam Union Township. I also served as judge of probate in Missaukee County for a period of nine years. I was a supervisor in Clam Union Township for nine years.

<sup>103 [</sup>Most English versions of this diary have the word "October" here, but that appears to be an early translator's typographical error. The original Dutch notebook clearly says April 6, 1868, followed by a 12-day journey ending on April 18. In one of his hand-corrected English transcriptions, Hirzel types but crosses out "October" and writes in "April." Within the text, April 6 makes more sense because Vogel says immediately they travelled for 12 days and arrived on April 18. Logistically, April is a much better time of year to homestead. Unfortunately, In *Nederlanders in America*, Lucas takes the error literally, and speculates that the entire party left homes in Ottawa in October 1868, just as winter is coming and after inexplicably waiting a whole year since the claim was filed in November 1867, only to spend six months as a group in Big Rapids. That would be a troublesome and expensive layover for multiple families, who then leave on the next April 6 to arrive on April 18 after a 12-day trip. Leonard Herweyer confirms they left Ottawa in 1868, but makes no mention of a layover in Big Rapids, which would seem a significant sixmonth event. Neither Vogel nor Herweyer mention such a layover. This typographical error is the only evidence that leads to speculation for a six-month layover. Unfortunately, Lucas edited the dates in both Vogel's diary and possibly Meulendyke's account to fit his six-month layover theory, creating what appears to be documentary evidence for an 1869 arrival. Lucas' version of Vogel's diary then appeared in at least *Netherlanders in America* and *Michigan History* magazine, if not more newspaper series, propagating the errors. ]

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>104</sup> [Hendrick J Abbing filed the claim in 1867 and received the deed in 1873.]

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>105</sup> [Lucas' version adds the year "1869", but that is a speculative addition based on the earlier typo of "October." Hirzel's version preserves the more original line: "Me and mine with an old wagon and a span of oxen arrived on April 18<sup>th</sup> at our destination after travelling twelve days." A more direct translation from the Dutch notebook reads, "after 12 days of travel on April 18th we arrived at the place." It seems Lucas smoothed Oosterbaan's English translation and even embellished dates he assumed were correct.]

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>106</sup> [Agnes M. Vogel was born on 20 June 1869, the second daughter of Jan Vogel and Betje Herweyer Vogel. Their first daughter, Derkje Vogel, was born in February 1868. It would seem Betje was nursing a newborn and pregnant (again) through much of their first years of homesteading. ]

During the summer of 1872, I assessed two townships in 40 acre parcels, placing the valuation thereon for purposes of taxation according to the estimated value of the land and the pine timber on it. During the fall of that same year I assumed a lumber position, estimating two million feet of logs, but as I realized only 1,800,000 feet I made no profit. The following winter I did not follow lumbering. I rented my farm and worked on it only when my official duties permitted. During the fall of 1874 I purchased some more government and state land. The next winter I cut the pine timber standing on this new property and realized profit. This enabled me during the following summer to open a general store with a small amount of stock. As I now owned a frame dwelling, I opened the store in our old log house. During the next winter I again engaged in lumbering, buying pine logs and selling them in Muskegon. Each winter I handled from two to five million feet of logs. During the summer of 1876 I served for two months on the jury in the United States Court at Grand Rapids. I also contracted to have a larger frame house built than the one in which we were living, steadily kept adding to my stock, and bought up produce which I resold to lumber camps.

In 1872 we organized a church community and opened a school.<sup>107</sup> Both church and school were built on property I freely gave for that purpose. In 1877 I opened a store in Lake City, the county seat of Missaukee County. Soon after I sold a half interest in this store to Arlington G. Lewis, after which we worked as partners for three years. During 1878 the government authorized a post office in our settlement which now was officially called Vogel Center. The post office was officially conducted in my store. I also sold general merchandise on commission at Falmouth, five miles from Vogel Center. My agent was Dr. L. Moorhouse, but the contract I made with him came to an end after being in effect one year. I also rented and operated a saw mill at Falmouth at this time. From then, and until August, 1881 my principal business was lumbering and conducting a general store. But I had also acquired a good farm consisting of about a hundred acres of cleared land. In addition, I owned 45 acres of stump land sown with grass, a stock of cattle, horses, etc. During the spring of 1881, I put 5,000,000 feet of pine logs into the river, a venture in which I lost \$3,000. This disaster was due to difficulties in floating the logs out of the West Branch of the Clam into the Muskegon River. Greatly discouraged, I gave up the lumbering business.

#### [Leaving Missaukee]

Northern Michigan being too far north for profitable farming, I eventually changed my residence. Early in August I left on a trip through the West and purchased 320 acres of land in Lancaster County, Nebraska at a price of \$8 per acre and also secured two lots in the city of Lincoln, the state capitol. <sup>109</sup> I rented my store at Vogel Center, sold my horses, fourteen in all, disposed of my other stock and all chattels, rented my farm and moved to Muskegon on October 10, 1881. There I had been given a position with the firm of Torrent and Ducey at a salary of \$1200 a year to act as their agent in purchasing pine logs and to serve as superintendent and paymaster for the transportation of logs to their mills.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>107</sup> Mr. Vogel states that this church—a Christian Reformed Church—was organized in 1872. But the *Yearbook of the Christian Reformed Church*, 1942, p.18, states that it was organized in 1873.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>108</sup> Arie DeJong was appointed Postmaster of Vogel Center on 25 Feb 1878.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>109</sup> A brief account of the settlement of Hollanders at Holland, Nebraska, appeared in *De Volksvriend* of Orange City, Iowa, June 30, 1910. See also issues of Sept 3, 1874; Sept 15, 1921; and May 19, 1932.

During the fall of 1881, I spent five weeks in the northern part of New York where, in behalf of my employers, in Franklin County on the St. Regis River, I purchased 53,000 acres of forest for \$130,000. When this was accomplished I returned in order to resume my duties on the Muskegon River.

On June 17, 1882, I left Muskegon for the Upper Peninsula of Michigan to purchase pinelands, and arrived at Marquette. After investigation the possibilities of lumbering in the woods nearby I returned to Muskegon where I arrived on July 13, finding my entire family afflicted with measles. My beloved child Maggie, was very sick and to our great sorrow passed away on the morning of the 16th and was buried. Meanwhile our new house, situated at the corner of Terrace and Catawha streets was being completed and we moved into it on the 18th. The two lots cost \$600, the house and fence \$1900. A few days later I again left for the Lake Superior country where I stayed until September 2, purchasing for the firm of Torrent and Ducey approximately 195 million feet of standing pine for \$110,000, part of this being government land. During the following fall I continued to buy and supervise the operations of my firm on the Muskegon River.

Gradually I sold my farm of 165 acres at Vogel Center. I was sole owner of part of this farm, in part of the rest I had a third, in the remainder only a half. I had purchased 80 acres of land from my father, Frans Vogel, when he became too old to work his farm, on the agreement that I was to furnish a home for my parents as long as they lived. Accordingly, in the spring of 1883 I built a new house for them on my farm at Vogel Center at a cost of \$250.

On July 27, 1883, I sold my homestead farm of 160 acres to Dominie Jan Schepers<sup>110</sup> at a price of \$4200, reserving one acre on which I had built a house for my parents, and also the land I previously had given to the church and school. During all of that year I continued to work for Torrent and Ducey at a salary of \$1200 per year, purchasing pine lands and looking after their logging operations on Muskegon River.

[At this point the *Michigan History* version ends.]

# [Muskegon Lumbering]

On January 2<sup>nd</sup>, 1884, I started from Muskegon up river with Mr. John Lynch, who was a partner in the Ducey Lumber Company with John Torrent and William S. Hofstra, to buy timber and logs from their mill at North Muskegon, upon an agreement that I was to have ¼ interest with them in the logs and timber and they each also ¼ interest. They owning the mill, and I to pay them for sawing at the prevailing rates. Also to pay interest on the money invested in the stock of logs and timber. I obtained this year about 20 million feet of logs, and we all made a good profit.

John Torrent was president of the Company, taking no active part, William S. Hofstra and John Lynch managing the mill and lumber business. I was to procure the timber and logs to the mill, do all up-river work, including getting logs to the mill.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>110</sup> The Reverend Jan Schepers, born 1837, served Vogel Center church from 1882 to 1902, and died in the latter year. See *Yearbook of the Christian Reformed Church*, 1942, p.63.

During 1885, we proceeded in the same line and by December 31<sup>st</sup> had logs cut and skidded and part hauled to the river amounting to 35,148,532 feet. We made a fairly good profit that year also.

In 1886 we continued the same work. The Ducey Lumber Company being unable to saw all the logs at its mill that I sent down the river, also bought another mill at North Muskegon, called the old Farr Mill. We had a fairly profitable year.

Continuing along in 1887 in the same way until December 13<sup>th</sup>, when I bought from Mrs. H.O. Langher [a] share of the of the capital stock of the Ducey Lumber Company, of the par value of \$13,125 with the accumulated undivided dividends, agreeing to pay thereafter \$20,000, part in cash and balance in notes, which were all paid with interest in one year, giving me about 1/5 of all stock in the [Ducey] Lumber Company and its earnings, instead of paying the company a saw bill on my ¼ of lumber cut, which turned out a profitable arrangement for me.

In 1888 [I] continued along the same way, buying timber and logs and operating the two mills of the Company and North Muskegon, the logs in the river scaling over 36 million feet. This was our biggest year in lumber. One of our mills burned down and we soon rebuilt it, so that within 90 days [we] had it operating again. At the end of the year, the Company showed assets of \$292,720.79 over liabilities.

In 1889 we proceeded along the same lines, and I put into the river about 15 million feet of logs, but it was not a very profitable year as the price of lumber was low. We did not lose money but made some, and on November 6<sup>th</sup>, I sold some of the Company's stump lands, amounting to about 46,000 acres, to George S. Frost & Co., of Detroit, for \$44,781 and also bought about 9,000 acres of pineland in the Upper Peninsula from the same firm for \$175,000, for John Torrent ¾ and for myself ¼.

The Ducey Lumber Company gradually closed up its business as a Company after about five years of successful operation. I bought for John Torrent and myself from George S. Frost & Co. all of the pine timber left on stump lands, to be cut in two years, and began to cut it and put into the river on my own account, using what money I had and borrowing such additional money as I needed.

In 1890 I bought John Torrent's interest in logs put in the river, being about nine million feet, for about \$55,000 and had them sawed at Torrent & Co.'s saw mill I Muskegon for \$1.75 per M. feet. I also attended to closing up the matters of the Ducey Lumber Company, as it still had many logs that year and also lumber to sell. I received this year out of the Company about \$18,000 cash on may share, after paying for stock and accounts and expenses of putting my nine million feet of logs in the river. Price of lumber was not high.

#### [Investment and Loss]

In 1891 I got about 11 million feet of saw-logs in the river, but it proved a very eventful year on account of failures striking me, by which I lost practically all I had, by direct losses and results therefrom. In January [1891,] I had bought 31 new houses and lots, flats, cottages, and a corner store for about \$48,000, owing thereon \$37,500. These were all new brick buildings; [I was] intending to pay what I owed on this property out of proceeds of lumber during the summer; [but then] failure struck me and finally I lost this property also, except 215 acres of land in Adams County, Ohio, being 60 miles up the

river from Cincinnati, which I got in trade for my equity in Chicago property. I even had my homestead in Muskegon mortgaged for \$1,500.00 and had to commence all over again at 52 years of age.

In 1892 I moved to Chicago with my family, trying to get from under property load with as little loss as possible. I also engaged in the real estate business there but this did not pay either and on August 5<sup>th</sup> I left the Chicago business in disgust. I went to see some lumbermen in Wisconsin, then on August 19<sup>th</sup> I went to Muskegon. I made a contract with John Torrent to move his mill to Sault Ste. Marie, Michigan, and manufacture timber in the Upper Peninsula, in which I had ¼ interest with \$5,400 paid on it. I worked that job of taking down and moving the mill the balance of that year and also did some timber estimating in the Upper Peninsula where I took sick and was laid up for a few weeks. At the end of the [time], Torrent being dissatisfied and arbitrary, knowing my present financial condition, I settled up with him, losing what interest I had in timber and work. From then on I engaged to work for wages at \$100.00 a month until I could do better. Needing daily support for family I accepted this and took charge of a lumber camp near North Muskegon. I had moved my family back to Muskegon in September and we lived in a rented house, our old one being occupied by my daughter Agnes and family. The end of this year was very discouraging to me.

In 1893, I worked for John Torrent for monthly wages up to June 3<sup>rd</sup>. Then I commenced to look around again for myself to get hold of some timber lands, but found it very hard to work without funds. Finally, I secured some credit and [agreed] to pay in logs, [thereby] starting some logging camps in the fall, selling the logs to Muskegon mill men. On the whole it was a very hard year for me.

In 1894, it proved [to be] an unfavorable winter for logging on account of lack of snow, and [it] was costly. I made no money on the logging and in the spring had not money enough to pay for labor, supplies, camp outfits, tools, and team, so I turned over all I had, as near equal as possible, to creditors and quit the logging business. I paid some of my creditors later on, when I could, and on April 24<sup>th</sup>, I went south to New Orleans, upon letters received from my former partner in the Ducey Lumber Company, Mr. W.S. Hofstra. Most of the balance of this year I looked over land and estimated pine and cypress timber in Louisiana, for daily wages of \$5.00 per day and expenses. This is a hard life to get a new start.

During this year, my father Frans Vogel died of old age, at Vogel Center, aged ninety years and ten days, his death occurring on Saturday, August 25, 1894, at 8:30 A.M. He was noted particularly for his honest and upright character all through life.

In 1895 I continued land looking and timber estimating in various southern states, mostly of cypress and pine timber for J.D. Lacey of New Orleans and also for some others. This was a year of very hard work and little headway financially, but I kept on the watch for chances.

In 1896 I proceeded to continue the work until July 1, when I commenced my employment for Louisiana Cypress Lumber Company at Harvey, Louisiana, to take charge of the woods, logging and towing of Cypress logs to the mill, at a salary of \$1,800 per year. This was very hard and [a] complicated job with one hundred twenty men in the woods camp, both black and white. The work was done with steam machinery to get the logs out and with three tug boats to tow the logs sixty miles to the mill at New

Orleans. There was all water and mud in the woods, also alligators, large snakes, frogs, and innumerable insects in the water and air.

In 1897 I continued with Cypress Lumber Co. until my year was out and then I commenced to work on a yearly salary of \$2,000 and expenses for D.A. Blodgett of Grand Rapids, my work being to take entire charge of his southern pine lands in Mississippi and Louisiana and to buy more when found desirable. Also, to look after title and pay taxes, regulate assessments, prevent trespassing and prosecute where necessary. I was to receive \$2,500 annually after the first year. Mr. Blodgett has between 300 and 400,000 acres in nine counties in Mississippi and in three parishes in Louisiana. My headquarters were at Hattiesburg, Miss. I have several assistants in the woods and all the responsibility is left to me. I make monthly reports and always have promptly all the money I called for. This business is much more agreeable and gives mutual satisfaction.

In 1898, 1899, and 1900, I continued with Mr. Blodgett in the same way that I have above described. I have a very busy and responsible position, but the work is pleasant and when it is appreciated it gives good satisfaction to the principals as well as to myself.

In the latter part of 1899, I can see that I made some headway for myself and also beginning of 1900. <sup>111</sup> On February 13, 1900, I made for myself a purchase of some timber land Mr. Blodgett had rejected the option on. I obtained the option myself from the Southern Pine Co., and sold it to the Gage Land & Improvement Co., making a commission of \$4,652.40. Out of this I paid remaining indebtedness on our home at Muskegon, bought [a] piano for [my] daughters, and other needed goods. I had some money left to buy some land on my own account for profit. This was the first real good year that I had since 1889.

In 1901, I continued with Mr. Blodgett but wrote him in January tendering my resignation to take effect at the end of the year, or at any time prior to that at his option. I did this to give him reasonable time to secure the right man to fill my place, and I did not want all my time tied up in the service of others, desiring to work on my own merits, and help my sons, Frank and Otto, into the land business. I made this year outside and above my salary of 42,500 and additional sum in land sales on my own account \$1,447.25. It was also a very profitable year for Mr. Blodgett and was very satisfactory to him. I had all his timberland in Mississippi re-estimated, there being about 375,000 acres, averaging about 9,075 feet per acre, making 3,403,125,000 feet, worth then at least \$2.00 per M. feet. This is outside of about 200,000 acres in Louisiana.

In 1902<sup>112</sup> I started an office for general land business at Jackson, Miss., under the name of John Vogel and Sons, with my sons, Frank O. and Otto Vogel. We worked in part for others, estimating timber and tried to sell land on a commission. We also bought some land on our own account to sell at an advance. We did a fairly good business, but the chances were getting smaller as land in the south had been so closely bought up by large holders that there was then but little offered at a price for profit. During 1901 and 1902, J.M. Gerrish and myself had bought in Scot and Newton counties, Miss., along the Alabama

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>111</sup> [Transcript reads 1890, but likely means 1900, rather than nine years earlier. ]

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>112</sup> [Transcript reads 1892, likely another typo. Vogel was in Chicago in 1892, not Mississippi.]

and Vicksburg R.R. about 11,000 acres if pine land at an average price of \$25,000 from John W. Blodgett of Grand Rapids. My sons and their families lived at Jackson, Miss.

In 1903, we continued in the same business until about May 1<sup>st</sup>, and then closed up our affairs there for the reason that prospects in this line were not as good as in the past as I have already stated, and we do not like this south country and people as well as in the North. Then in the early part of May, Frank and his family again moved to Chicago where he engaged in office work while Otto and his family moved to Muskegon, he working there in a store as bookkeeper and collector. I for myself continued some work estimating timber in the south for various parties, looking after my personal land interest and taking some rest.

On January 8<sup>th</sup>, [1904] Mr. Gerrish and I sold out land in Scott and Newton counties, Miss., for \$57,125. It cost us up to that time about \$33,000 leaving a profit of \$24,125, one half of which went to each of us, as well as the money that we actually had in the land besides the money that we had borrowed. This was to be a cash deal, but on getting the abstracts of title to part of the land bought of the railroad company, a lawsuit being pending against that company and payment for that part of land was deferred until it could be settled in the courts. The other part of the sale was transferred and [we] proceeded to pay our debt on it, this leaving our investment and profit hung up for court decision. This case was not decided until July 10<sup>th</sup>, 1905 when the Mississippi Supreme Court rendered a favorable decision, settling the title question, and we then received our money out of it, being yet \$29,360 of principal and \$1,800 in interest and taxes, a total of \$31,360. After paying remaining indebtedness, interest, and expenses, [it] left my share about \$8,715 cash.

I then felt [to be] in much easier circumstances than I had for over 13 years, during all of which time I put in very persistent effort. Now again I made home improvements. On August 25<sup>th</sup>, [1905], I received \$6,720 cash for the sale of 840 acres in Lauderdale county, Miss., for which I had paid in 1902 the sum of \$3,940 and I have forty acres of land left.

I also have a ¼ interest with R.W. Butterfield of Grand Rapids, Mich., in Calhoun county, Miss. lands, there being between 7,000 and 8,000 acres, to which we are gradually adding by purchase [as] land is offered for sale and titles cleared; I obtained [this interest] through an arrangement I had made with Mr. Butterfield under a contract signed October 5<sup>th</sup>, 1903. Under this contract, he furnished the money to buy the land and I looked after the estimating of timber there on, taking care of the taxes, looking after trespasses, etc., my interest being ½ and to be paid by me when the land was sold.

On October 2, 1905, myself with my sons Otto and John C. and other hired help went again to Mississippi to estimate pine, cypress, and other timber on large tracts of land on a contract price per acre, Otto being in partnership with me. I was engaged at this work until about July 1, 1906, estimating by forty acre lots about 320,000 acres of land, at from 3 cents to 5 cents per acre, making very good pay amounting to \$8.00 per day, and sometimes much over that; besides paying the hired help, and all travelling expenses, and boarding the men, and taking out July and August for rest and vacation. In the meantime, I continued to increase by additional purchases my interest holdings in Calhoun County,

Mississippi timber land with Mr. Butterfield, so that in 1906, I had interest in 11,000 acres, coasting for the entire acreage at that time about \$40,000.

On July 23, 1906, I bought 1,000 shares of stock in the Casa-Diablo Gold Mining Co., of Mono County, California, for \$0.35 per share and on August 2<sup>nd</sup>, I bought 2,000 shares more at the same price as follows: For myself 800, my wife 600, Frank and Gertrude each 200, Effie and May each 100. This stock, from the best obtainable information, looked very promising in the near future.

[This is the end of Jan Vogel's memoirs.]

### Fred C. Hirzel's Epilogue

The foregoing are the details of the life of John Vogel, as written by himself. He died at Muskegon, Michigan on September 23, 1907, leaving surviving his widow, Barbara [Betje] Vogel, and ten children: Dora [Derkje] Baker, Agnes Vanderwerp, Gertrude Vogel, Frank C. Vogel, Effie Baker, Otto Vogel, Mattie [Macheltje] Cotie, Katherine E. Dunn, John G. Vogel, and Mary M. [Maaike] Birch.

# Addendum: Obituary of Jan Vogel (1907)

[John Vogel died in Muskegon, 23 September 1907. His obituary was published in Muskegon soon thereafter. *The Waterfront* newspaper of Lake City reprinted this obituary on January 27, 1965, about 60 years later, with elements from Vogel's diary.]

### 1965 Waterfront Editor's Note:

The following article was taken from a Muskegon paper of about 1907. It was given to us by Miss Mary Hoekwater of Falmouth, presented in interest by *the Waterfront*.

### **Founder of Two Colonies**

John Vogel, twice founder of Dutch settlements in Michigan, a Muskegon lumberman and a veteran of the Civil War, died at 2:30 this morning at his residence, 258 Terrace Street. He had just passed the age of 68 years. Cancer of the stomach was the cause of his death.

It was last February that the first intimation of Mr. Vogel's breaking health came. At that time, he returned home from Mississippi. Thinking that his ill-health was caused by nothing more than an attack of the grip, six weeks later he went south again to resume his business in timber estimating.

By June, however, he had become so poorly that he was once more obliged to abandon his work in Mississippi. After returning his condition grew still worse and a month ago he became confined to the house.

Besides his widow, Mr. Vogel leaves the following children: Mrs. John Vanderwerp, Otto Vogel, Miss Effie Vogel, John G. Vogel, and Miss Mary Vogel of Muskegon, Mrs. William T. Baker of Grand Haven and Miss Gertrude Vogel, Frank C. Vogel, Mrs. Louis Cotie, and Mrs. Arthur H. Dunn of Chicago. All of these were present at the time of his death excepting Mrs. Dunn, who arrives this afternoon.

There are also fourteen grandchildren; Mrs. John VanRhee of Drenthe is a sister and Mrs. Arie Hoekwater of Vogel Center, a half-sister.

Two brothers of Mrs. Vogel are here, called by his death. They are Gerrit Herweyer and Leonard Herweyer of Vogel Center.

It was at Griesen, Nieuw Kerk, province of South Holland, in the Netherland, that Mr. Vogel was born September 8, 1839. He came to this country in 1854 and his life became a long and active career. After working at the carpenter trade at Holland, Zeeland and Grand Rapids, he enlisted in the civil war on September 18, 1861 and served through the entire war.

Mr. Vogel had enlisted as a member of Company D., Second regiment, Michigan cavalry. After three years of service he enlisted again with the most of his regiment in March, 1864.

On two occasions he was slightly wounded. It was not until November 30, 1864, that his service was seriously impaired. On that date he was severely wounded at the battle of Franklin, Tenn. For many months he lay in the hospital until his official discharge from the army was received by him for disability on August 1, 1865.

His work of colonization followed. Going after the war to the Netherlands to visit his parents, he succeeded in inducing some of his relatives and others to come to this country. At once they settled at what then was North Holland.

Mr. Vogel purchased an interest in a sawmill there, but he met with a heavy reverse when it was destroyed by fire in February, 1867. It was a total loss, as there was no insurance.

#### Founded Northern Colony

Another colony was then established by him in the northern part of the state. With renewed courage he started on a prospecting tour with a view to a new Dutch settlement.

It was thus that what is now Vogel Center was formed on a homestead that Mr. Vogel took up in Missaukee County in November 1867.

The following spring, accompanied by his family, he went to occupy the homestead and from time to time induced others to settle in the same vicinity. In 1871 he assisted in organizing Clam Union township and later in 1872, Missaukee county. The business that he followed included both mercantile, with a general store, and lumbering.

In the early years of the organization of Missaukee county many township offices were held by Mr. Vogel. During one term of four years he served as judge of probation for Missaukee county.

### **Engaged in Lumbering**

In his residence in Muskegon, Mr. Vogel was very actively engaged in lumbering and timber estimating. At one time he was a stockholder in the Ducey Lumber company, when it owned a sawmill at North Muskegon. He also had been employed at different times by that company. Torrent & Ducey, D. A. Blodgett and others.

For the last five years he was engaged in partnership with his son in the business of timber estimating under the firm name of John Vogel & Son. They operated principally in the south—in Mississippi, Florida, Louisiana, and Kansas.

Mr. Vogel's marriage was on June 23, 1867, at North Holland. Mrs. Vogel was formerly Miss Bertie Herweyer.

(NOTE: there is also a picture of Mr. Vogel with this article)

Obituary Transcription © 2004 - 2011 Barbara Lesser

# Firsts of Missaukee County (1902)

Reconstruction of Mary Reeder's 1902 paper

[Mary Reeder's list of "firsts" in Missaukee county was not only a relatively early compilation, it has been repeatedly quoted as a source in subsequent articles of the county's firsts, errors and all. 113 It seems to be sourced from Stout's *Story of the Year*, Dan Reeder's memoirs, county records, and personal memory.

It is reconstructed here from later works that quote her extensively, including Chapter XVIII of Powers, Perry F., *A History of Northern Michigan and its People*, 3 volumes, 1912, pages 424-437, and "Some Facts of Missaukee County in The Early Days," *Missaukee Republican*, Lake City, Michigan, 20 February 1936.]

## [Powers' Introduction]

One of the best general sketches of pioneer times in Lake City and Missaukee county was prepared by Mrs. Mary Reeder and read as a paper, in 1902, before the old settlers' reunion of that year.... From the paper mentioned, are collated the salient facts comprising the county's early history:

## [Rough Sketch of Earliest Settlers]

The first survey made of this end of the peninsula was made about the time that Michigan was admitted to statehood and was under federal direction largely for the purpose, it is said, of securing a more definite and accurate map of the outline of the lower peninsula and the location of the principal streams and lakes. At this time, 1837, the nearest trading points at which food and other supplies might be purchased were at Rix Robinson's Post at Grand Rapids, or at a fur traders' post in on Saginaw Bay. North of here, there was no white man nearer than Mackinaw and no settlement had yet been made on Grand Traverse Bay, but there was an Indian mission at what is now known as Harbor Springs.

The first survey of the county was made by John Brink, D.S., in May 1937, and a resurvey was made by W.L. Coffinberry about 1853 to 1856. 114

The first and second homesteads in the county<sup>115</sup> were taken by A.B. Clark and a gentleman named Laird, both of whom abandoned their claims before final proofs. The third was taken by

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>113</sup> Her topics often parallel George Stout's 1917 history, but Stout has more factual detail. One wonders if there was a common source available before the turn of the century. They may well be reviewing county clerk's records. Perhaps a future scholar can annotate this paper with likely sources.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>114</sup> See Koster, Steven, "The Earliest Settlers of Missaukee" for more detail. John Brink did lead a survey team in the 1830s, and W.L. Coffinberry (and several others) led survey teams in the 1850s. These surveyors are often called the first Euro-Americans known to set foot in Missaukee. The maps are held in the State of Michigan Archives, accessible on <a href="https://www.seekingmichigan.org">www.seekingmichigan.org</a> in 2014.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>115</sup> See Koster, Steven, "The Earliest Settlers of Missaukee" for more accurate detail. H. Alson Ferris filed on 5 October 1867, receiving a deed in 1874. Jan Vogel (with three others) filed on 7 Nov 1867. See

H.A. Ferris, who made final proof but never actually resided on it, and sold it soon afterward. [Jan Vogel and several other Dutchmen filed claims after Ferris and before Washington Richardson, in November 1867. They also built homes before Richardson in 1868.]. W. Richardson was [not] the first who made a permanent home in the county, the date of his claim being December 27. 1867. William J. Morey also homesteaded his land during the same month. 117

# [A history, likely from Stout's Story of the Year]

The first recorded election was held April 3, 1861, <sup>118</sup> for Justice of the Supreme Court and other state offices, forty-one votes were cast, all Republican.

Of the first election of county officers, the records in the county clerk's office tell nothing. All that can be ascertained is that sometime in the spring of 1871 a special election was held at which the following officers were chosen: John Vogel, judge of probate; Gillis McBain sheriff; E. W. Watson, clerk and register; Ira Van Meter, treasurer; A. Stout, surveyor. The circuit judge, T. J. Ramsdell of Traverse City, appointed L. H. Gage of Traverse City, prosecuting attorney for this county, there being no attorney within its limits.

The county seat was located at Falmouth, a permanent site to be fixed by the voters later. It is related by the old settlers here that in June 1873 a vote was taken in the county as to where the county seat was to be and that both sides, the Falmouth and Reeder (now known as Lake City) organizations, brought in or imported a great many of their votes and the Reeder organization won only by about one vote<sup>119</sup> [but this is a rumor. Nevertheless,] a high old time was held in Reeder that night.

The first board of supervisors met at the Perley farm, about two miles northeast of Falmouth ([then called] Pinhook), on June 6, 1871. Those present were William J. Morey of Pioneer, James White of Quilna (now known as Caldwell and Bloomfield; the name was changed to Caldwell a year or two later), Daniel Reeder of Reeder, John Vogel of Clam Union, and Henry Van Meter of Riverside. Mr. Reeder was elected chairman. The salaries of county officers were fixed by this board as follows: Clerk, \$500; treasurer. \$250: prosecuting attorney. \$200; judge of probate, \$100; sheriff, \$100. At this session the *Osceola Outline* of Hersey, was designated as the official paper of the county.

<sup>&</sup>quot;United States Bureau of Land Management Tract Books, 1800-c. 1955," images, FamilySearch (https://familysearch.org/pal:/MM9.3.1/TH-1942-32488-12539-47)

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>116</sup> According to their mutual memoirs, Vogel and several other families not only filed claims earlier than the Richardson's, they returned to build cabins (in April 1868) a few weeks earlier than the Richardsons (in May 1868). Dan Reeder appears later that same year.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>117</sup> There is no known documentation of when Morey began living on the claim.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>118</sup> 1861 is likely a typographical error, original to at least Powers' book; more likely it's 1871. (See <a href="http://quod.lib.umich.edu/m/micounty/bac9250.0001.001/465">http://quod.lib.umich.edu/m/micounty/bac9250.0001.001/465</a>)

<sup>119</sup> Stout in 1891 records the vote was Lake City 131; Falmouth 95; and "center of County," 1 vote; total 227. The one-vote rumor seems to begin with the stray write-in vote for the "center."

The first general election on record was held in November, 1872, during the Grant and Greeley campaign. There were one hundred and nineteen national ballots polled, Grant receiving one hundred and eleven and Greeley eight. On the county ticket, John Vogel was reelected probate judge, Otto Schaap, sheriff, M. D. Richardson clerk and register, Washington Reeder treasurer Arlington C. Lewis, prosecuting attorney, B. C. Bonnell surveyor, and Thomas T. Caldwell and Addison T. Smith coroners.

#### [Firsts, compiled from Stout and other various sources]

The first birth that occurred in the county was a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John Vogel [named Agnes, born on 20 Jun 1869]; <sup>120</sup> the second, Etta, a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. M. D. Richardson, was born March 28. 1870. <sup>121</sup>

The first male child to be born in the county was William Wallace, born Oct. 14, 1871, and was the son of George & Minnie Wallace.

The first death that occurred was that of [ten-year-old] Albert Richardson, March 21, 1870. 122

The first marriage was John Cavanaugh and Miss Caroline Van Meter, on March 1, 1871, solemnized by the Rev. W. Richardson. 123

The first physician was Dr. Moorehouse of Falmouth, <sup>124</sup> and the first resident attorney, A. C. Lewis; both later moved to California.

The first road was built in the fall of 1867 from the Watson farm to Falmouth, by a Mr. MacDonald; Oscar Noble constructed the first state road through the county, the Houghton Lake state road.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>120</sup> Agnes M. Vogel was born on 20 June 1869, the second daughter of Jan Vogel and Betje Herweyer Vogel. Their first daughter, Derkje Vogel, was born in February 1868, while Vogel had returned to Ottawa county after filing his Missaukee homestead claim to gather his family and goods. It would seem Betje was nursing a newborn and pregnant again through much of their first years of homesteading.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>121</sup> In 1968, Fred Hirzel writes in his collection "I know that there has been some doubt as to which of the two girls were the first white children born in Missaukee county. Some thought the first was a daughter of Marion Richardson, while others believed the first to be the daughter of John Vogel. At an Old Settlers Reunion held at Lake City some years ago, this question was threshed out to a conclusion. (Mr George Stout of Lake city so informed me in July 1943.) Marion D. Richardson was present at this reunion and conceded that the daughter of John Vogel, not his, was the first born. Fred C. Hirzel."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>122</sup> Albert was born about 1860, the youngest son of Washington Richardson and youngest brother to Marion D Richardson.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>123</sup> James Cavanaugh (b. 06 Jun 1844), son of Daniel Cavanaugh and Elizabeth Harrison Cavanaugh, indeed married Caroline (b. 30 Apr 1848), the daughter of Ira Van Meter and Janette McBain Van Meter1 March 1871.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>124</sup> Dr. Levi Morehouse (b. 1846 in Wisconsin) was in Falmouth as early as his marriage on 03 Apr 1877 to Ida May Vaughan, and they appear together on the 1880 census where he is listed as a Physician. They are in California no later than Feb 1888, when daughter Vera dies at age 2.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>125</sup> MacDonald had a lumbering camp, south of present Falmouth. Dan Reeder in his memoirs speaks of stopping there in 1868 before filing a claim in present Lake City. E.W. Watson was also a bookkeeper for the Perley-Palmer lumber company, as well as the first county clerk and US Postmaster in 1871, so the farm could be associated with him. No permanent homesteader was in Missaukee in 1867, so presumably this was a logging road of some sort to the "pinhook" turn on the Clam River, rather than for people.

The first logging camp in the county was built by W. Windson in 1866, on section 34, town 21, north range 6 west, on the bank of the Clam River two miles below Vogel Center.

The first pole logging road was built by Paul Lux Sr., in 1877, running from section 35, town 23N 7W, to the head of the West Branch, or what is known as the Gerish dam. It was operated during the spring and summer of 1878 and brought three million five hundred thousand feet of logs to the West Branch.

The first railroad for running logs was built by Watson Brothers. Tom Simpson also built one about the same time in 1876-7, the rails being part iron and part wood. One road ran from the No. 2 farm on the Butterfield to the main Muskegon river. The others ran to the Clam.

The first passenger [rail]road was completed in December, 1885, by Mr. Cummer of Cadillac. In the spring of 1890 the Missaukee branch of the Grand Rapids & Indiana was extended to Lake City.

The first saw and shingle mill in the county was built by Pearly, Palmer & Company in the winter of 1871-2.

The first grist mill was erected at Falmouth.

The first hotel was also built at Falmouth in 1871 and was managed by John Cavanaugh.

Indians had occupied the land long before white people settled here, but John Green and John Wagan were the first who located in the county in late years. 126

The first deer, bear, or wolves were [not] killed by a man named Hicks in 1866. [John Brink killed a bear in July 1838]. 127

A temporary courthouse was built at Falmouth in 1871.<sup>128</sup> In 1873 a courthouse and jail were built at Lake City and in 1883 a new courthouse was erected at a cost of \$10,000. The new jail was erected in 1886 at a cost of something over \$7,000.

The first sermon<sup>129</sup> [that] was preached [in the county was likely at Vogel Center with the founding of Vogel Center CRC in 1872. The first sermon preached in the city limits] at Lake City [was] in January, 1874, by John R. Robinson, a half-breed Indian.

The agricultural society held their first fair in the year 1880 in Lake City, south of the house now owned by William J. Morey. Since then it has been held on the grounds purchased by the society.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>126</sup> This line seems out of place in topic and date, and unclear in meaning. Perhaps it's quoted out of context from an unknown source.

 <sup>127</sup> Surveyor John Brink tells an entertaining story of killing bear on July 4, 1838, while surveying.
 128 Falmouth was the first county seat, so a courthouse would be in order. Falmouth was declared to be county seat by the state legislature when it organized Missaukee as a county in 1871. An election to choose a county seat was held in 1873, and the government was moved to Lake City.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>129</sup> Not only did the Dutch Reformed pioneers worship together from the beginning, a formal Christian Reformed Church at Vogel Center was organized by at least 1873. Pastor Jan Schepers served in Vogel from 1881-1901 (*Yearbook of the Christian Reformed Church*, 1942, p.18).

The nearest markets long ago were Hersey (Osceola County), on the south and Traverse City, the north.

The first post office was at [Falmouth, with Eugene Watson appointed US Postmaster on 18 Dec 1871. The second post office was at] the home of Daniel Reeder at Reeder (now Lake City), in the spring of 1872,<sup>130</sup> but mail used to be brought to the settlers in the county by those who made long trips for provisions, the settlers coming for their mail when the men<sup>131</sup> returned. The mail averaged perhaps one every two months.

The first store was built by John Koopman in October, 1869, it being a log house-residence and store combined. In 1879 he built a store at Falmouth. 132

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>130</sup> Reeder was appointed on 22 Jan 1872, succeeded by William Reeder on 18 Sep 1873. See *Record of Appointment of Postmasters, 1832-1971. NARA Microfilm Publication, M841, 145 rolls. Records of the Post Office Department, Record Group Number 28.* Washington, D.C.: National Archives.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>131</sup> Powers writes "trains," but the he's talking about men.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>132</sup> Stout's 1891 history recounts: "In October 1869 he [Jan Koopman] moved with his family to the Clam River, consuming 10 days in the journey. Being informed there were no more homesteads, he squatted on a piece of railroad land, adjoining to John Vogel's, where he built a log house and store combined, and opened what was probably the first store in Missaukee county."

# Pioneer Days in Clam Union Township (1935)

By Leonard Herweyer, circa 1935, published 16 September 1981 Waterfront

[Leendert (Leonard) Herweyer was born 24 Sep 1858 in Strijen, Zuid-Holland, Netherlands to Otto Herweijer and Aagje DenHertog Herweyer. They had 11 children, but only 6 survived into adulthood of whom Leendert was the youngest.

This memoir is a first-person, albeit a young boy's, recollection of pioneering in Missaukee. It complements Jan Vogel's more extensive memoirs.

Leonard Herweyer died 10 Jul 1937 in Vogel Center.]

### **Waterfront Preface**

The following story by Leonard Herweyer is an interesting account of "Pioneer Days in Clam Union Township." Leonard Herweyer is the grand uncle of Carl VanderPol, who fondly refers to this and another diary of John Vogel he possesses as "the scrolls." The four-part series on "Pioneer Days" will appear courtesy of VanderPol in place of *Down Memory Lane* for the next four weeks. 133

## [Chapter One: Immigration]

This is a personal history of my father's family, telling how we came to Michigan.

It was in 1860 that my father's brother, Jacob Herweyer, came to Michigan and settled in Ottawa County, near what became the town of Zeeland. While there he saw that this state was a better place to make a living than the Netherlands, although he probably would have to work hard in this unsettled district. When the Civil War came and he made a little money, he remembered what a life of poverty he had had in Holland, so he wrote my father how thing looked to him here, and urged him to come to America. In 1865 the war ended and he wrote us that if we wanted to come to Holland, he would help us.

In the fall of 1865, we started on our voyage across the Atlantic—82 days in a sailing vessel. The first five days took us nearly to mid-ocean from Rotterdam, but five days later we were back in the English Channel again. How many times we went out and back, how many zig zags we made, no one will ever be able to tell. I was only seven years old, but I still remember the whole voyage.

Once a large wave almost laid us flat. The water came over the high side railing, but the heavy ballast pulled us back right side up again. Two of the lifeboats were torn off and the top railing was gone, so they stretched ropes along standards for safety. I was on the dock when I saw the water come in over the side railing. I jumped up and grabbed a rope and hung, dangling like a pendulum, when a sailor spied me and rescued me. I would have had a good bath by being washed from one side of the ship to the other if my hands had slipped. It was fun to think it over later. How pans and palls had rolled and

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>133</sup> Presumably, the *Waterfront*'s schedule was Chapter 1 on 16 September 1981, Chapter 2 on 23 Sep 1981, Chapter 3 on 30 Sep 1981, and Chapter 4 on 7 October 1981.

rattled! Everything was upset. While the ship laid on its side for a moment, a few passengers fell and landed in the top bunk on the other side of the ship. When the ship righted again, everyone had a job fishing his or her belongings from the floor. Everything loose was sliding around. I was too young to realize the danger and saw only the funny side of it.

We saw several sperm whales, dolphins, flying fish, etc. Finally, we arrived near the eastern coast of Florida, where we passed through a drift of sea weeds for miles, and finally we headed north into the Gulf Stream. The weather was so hot that we lay on the deck with the thinnest of clothing on. Then two days later we had snow on the deck. This was December 31, 1865.

Next day, News Years Day, we landed in New York and were taken to Castle Garden, an immigrant station then. From there we took a train to Grand Rapids and hired a team to take us from there to Zeeland. The next meeting with my uncle was a very welcome one for all of us. It took several days to tell the stories of our experiences.

Now back to our trip. My father had been seasick during the entire voyage. We had crossed the ocean in a freight boat called the "Asia" with eighty passengers—not first or second class, but I think about twenty-four class. The whole passenger department had been infected with "Cooties." It was said one had to tie his clothes to the bunk while changing or they would creep to the other side of the room. Old fashioned lumber camps that we found later in Missaukee County could not be compared with it.

For three summers [after arriving], we lived on a rented farm northeast of Zeeland, [Michigan]. Our uncle had helped to finance our trip to America, and we repaid him with labor—the only thing we had to sell. Kindly neighbors urged us to buy a cow, and when we told them we had no money, they donated toward the purchase price of a cow. My mother had to go around and gather up the funds promised. She always said this was the hardest thing she ever had to do, something we would not have done if we had not been compelled by the need of the family and the urging of the kind-hearted neighbors. Finally she obtained enough to buy a young cow from a man in Vriesland, named Sprik, for \$43.00.

# [Chapter One: Pioneering Missaukee]

In the fall of 1867, my sister married John Vogel,<sup>135</sup> and he began to talk of moving to a new locality, where cheap land and perhaps homesteads from the government might be had in Missaukee County. In 1868, <sup>136</sup> plans were made for that undertaking. Before spring had arrived, all decided to go.

Maps were obtained during the winter [of 1866-1867,] and a trip to Traverse City, where the land office was located, was made on foot [in Fall 1867] through snow knee deep. Various tracts of land were

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>134</sup> Immigration records suggest the ship name was "Asia of Bremen," and the family passed through the immigration office in New York on 2 January 1866.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>135</sup> Jan Vogel and Betje Herweyer married on 23 Jun 1867, in the spring, not the autumn.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>136</sup> Herweyer's dates appear to be off, even if his sequence is well remembered (for a boy of 10). Jan Vogel and four other Dutchmen filed homestead claims in Traverse City on Missaukee lands in November 1867, according to Federal Tract Land records and Vogel's own memoirs. If they were reviewing maps and laying plans in preparation, it's likely they were doing so in the Winter/Spring of 1867. Then Vogel married in June, then the claimants went to Traverse City and Missaukee in the Fall of 1867.

looked over and decided on. John Vogel, together with my oldest brother, Gerrit Herweyer, Henry Westveld, Henry Jager, and John Abbing made the trip mostly by use of a compass, following the section lines, camping out wherever night overtook them.

Finally arriving at Traverse City, they found that another party had found out where they were intending to make a settlement, had gone to the land office a shorter way and had bought some of the land before they got there. That was the first disappointment.<sup>137</sup>

Then my brother [Jakob] and John Abbing took up 160 acres each on section 10 of what is now Clam Union, just by mere guess. My brother took up the SW ¼ of section 10, John Abbing SE ¼ of section 10, John Vogel SE ¼ of section 20, and Henry Westveld NW ¼ of section 28, all in township 21 range 6, and Henry Jager took a claim on the SE ¼ of section 24 in Riverside township. All returned to Ottawa County and reported their experiences [in late 1867].

During the early part of the Spring [1868], <sup>138</sup> Vogel, Westveld, Jager, and my brother Jake went back to the land chosen to erect small shanties. In the first part of May [1868], Vogel and the other parties moved to their first homes in Missaukee County. When there, all started to fall timber and clean up a small tract of land, and plant potatoes with grub hoes between the stumps. At that time, it was considered a hard day's work to plant one bushel of seed potatoes. They also planted some garden seeds, such as lettuce, beets, radish, and so forth. In July they went to the hay marshes in Riverside to cut feed for the stock for winter.

My father and mother had agreed to follow north in the fall of 1869. We had lived on a 40-acre farm a mile and half northeast of Zeeland, [Ottawa, Michigan] for three years. We sold what little produce we had, such as corn, corn fodder, potatoes, beans, and hay. This bought us \$102 with which we moved to Missaukee. When the time came we started our trek.

Mr. Vogel with his horse team came to move us as we bade good-bye to civilization. We had with us a young man named Andrew Lamer and John Abbing who assisted us in driving our two cows and our two 2-year-old steers. This was about the middle of September [1869]. The trip took seven days.

We found shelter in a little log house built by Henry Westveld. The roof was made of peeled hemlock bark. In the following spring when the snow began to thaw, "down came 'McGinty." My mother put all available utensils in operation, such as milk pans, tin pails, and even the umbrella to cover our beds.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>137</sup> Only one other person made a homestead claim before Jan Vogel, that being Alson Ferris, filed a claim in what is now Pioneer (24N, 7W, sect. 34, SW1/4) on 5 October 1867, at age 23, receiving a deed in 1874. However, a Thomas Bierma filed a claim in on January 1867 that was never fulfilled as a homestead claim, which John Vogel claimed later. Maybe it was a lumber speculator who tied up land for a time?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>138</sup> The Vogel party, according to Vogel's memoirs, left Ottawa on 6 April 1868, travelled for 12 days through Big Rapids for supplies, and arrived in Missaukee permanently on 18 April 1868. Because of a typographical error in some translations of Vogel's diary, Lucas speculated the party left in October, wintered in Big Rapids, and arrived the next Spring, but Herweyer makes no mention of the Vogel party wintering 1868-1869 in Big Rapids. Herweyer was not with the first Vogel party, but a six-month layover in Big Rapids would be memorable. Moreover, the correct 1868 dates are in the original Dutch memoirs.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>139</sup> Otto Herweyer filed a claim on 13 March 1869.

Think of our ignorance! All kinds of good pine were available, and in, say, two days, that shanty could have been covered complete with white pine shakes.

The winter [of 1869-1870] was unusually long with deep snow, making marsh hay so scarce that we had to cut down green timber so the cattle could eat the buds. Finally, spring [1870] came and we began to plan for the summer.

During the next winter [still likely 1869-1870, since these men file claims in 1869], John W. Hoekwater<sup>140</sup> came. He then being a young man. He worked in a camp and soon induced his brother Arie to come and take up a homestead claim.<sup>141</sup> Also Cornelius Catts, Ralph Veen, and John Meyering<sup>142</sup> came and settled in what is now Prosper.

News spread quickly to [Ottawa county towns like] Holland, Zeeland, Vriesland, and the county around there that Missaukee would soon build up, that it was a good place where willing workers could soon make a home with little or no money. Then Mr. Vogel placed an advertisement in a Holland paper making a strong appeal for more Settlers. It did not take long to spread the news that lumbermen had started operations farther up the Clam River and young men could find employment at good wages.

The following year [probably 1870 given the dates of claims], John Westdorp, <sup>143</sup> Jan Jacht, <sup>144</sup> Cornelius Quist, Sr. , <sup>145</sup> Frank Vogel, <sup>146</sup> D.J. Haming, and Jacob Bierens settled in the Vogel district. Then followed Peter DeZeeuw, Gerrit Vis, and John Vis of Prosper.

The third winter we were here, John Lutke came to work and hired out to Vogel to haul hay and supplies, first from Evart and later from Clam Lake, now [called] Cadillac.

Does any one of our present generation realize what it means to travel one hundred miles or more through woods and jungle, sleeping where night overtakes you? And then when back, to stare at the tall forest that had to be cut down, burned, and destroyed before one could make a living on it? But all did make a living, such as it was. Everything was plain. No cakes or pies, no style. One dollar went a long ways in clothing.

# **Chapter Two: [Pioneer Life]**

Now while the River Road was only a trail through the woods, made just wide enough to wiggle through with a wagon, Mr. Vogel proposed to build a large canoe and start navigation. A canoe thirty feet long

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>140</sup> Jan Willem Hoekwater, b. 01 Nov 1843 in Leerdam, Zuid-Holland, Netherlands; still single at this age. He appears on the census in Reeder on 30 August 1870, so he was likely in a lumber camp winter of 1869-1870. He files a claim on 2 October 1869.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>141</sup> Arie Hoekwater, b. 04 Mar 1841 in Schoonrewoerd, Leerdam, Zuid-Holland, Netherlands, immigrated in Oct 1865 with his wife Willemijntje Vogel, sister to Jan Vogel. He filed a claim on 13 March 1869, and is on the 1870 census in Reeder.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>142</sup> John Meyering and Ralph Veen filed homestead claims on 5 April 1869.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>143</sup> John Westdorp files a claim on 17 September 1869.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>144</sup> Jan Jagt filed a claim on 17 September 1869. Notoriously, he and his wife were later murdered.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>145</sup> Cornelius Quist files a claim on 17 September 1869, as did Jakob Quist.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>146</sup> Frans Vogel files a claim on 19 June 1869.

and wide enough to lay a flour barrel in crosswise was built and everyone looked for a happy future in transportation. The route down the Clam River, and then down that river to Big Rapids where much needed supplies could be bought and hoped to be returned home by river. At the same time, should the venture be successful, they also stood a good chance to get supplies to bring back for some lumbermen, who were then starting to cut timber along the Clam River, up toward what is now Falmouth. The river had been cleared of snags some distance below us, but much brush and many trees had to be removed.

The first voyage to Big Rapids was a great success. Landing there they bought a chain and locked and secured the canoe, and then walked [from Big Rapids] to see the folks in Ottawa county to tell them how they made their little improvements and what the possibilities were for the future. After visiting for a couple days, they walked back to Big Rapids. On arriving there, they found their canoe had been stolen and taken away. Imagine their disappointment. With only a small amount of money, it looked like a dark future. But Mr. Vogel was an ex-soldier who had served through four years of the Civil War and had seen many disappointments and was not easily discouraged. All walked back and then took Vogel's small team of horses and brought in the needed provisions by road. I well remember how anxious we all were when Mr. Vogel was due to come back—how we listened for the rattle of the wagon long before it arrived, and at last when the sound of the wheels became distant[ly heard], how it thrilled our hearts. No one can comprehend the feeling without going through the experience.

Think of the many miles of dense forest which lay between us and the then small settlements. Grand Rapids was the nearest railroad, and our supplies were hauled from there to where we got them. It took seven days to make the trip—three days down and four days back. Mr. Vogel always carried an extra kingbolt with him in case of a break of the one in use. Also, an auger and axe were carried, and it happened many times that both kingbolts were broken and he came home with a wooden peg in its place. He had to make one or two wagon reaches on the way, too. As his team was small, he frequently had to unload one-half of his load at the foot of a hill, drive up the hill, unload, and go back for the other half. Such experiences were not uncommon.

But there were other things. Oh, boy! The mosquitoes and deer flies were experts in their professions. Had it not been for the iron will of the Vogels and other pioneers, this county and state would not be what it is today.

Do you wonder that our provision prices were high? Take into consideration the difficulties of getting them transported here at that time, shortly after the war. Flour was \$16 per barrel, pork was \$40, and salt was \$3 plus \$9 for hauling, totaling \$12.

But at last summer was drawing to a close. Potatoes and garden truck were gathered, and the next thought was the coming winter.

In the spring of 1868, [before leaving Ottawa county,] it was decided that my brother Jacob [age 17] and my sister Effie [age 13] were to accompany Mrs. Vogel [their sister, Betje Herweyer Vogel] to the new country, so Mrs. Vogel would have company when Mr. Vogel was away. On one such occasion, wolves introduced themselves by standing against the little shanty, making the woods ring with their melodious howls. They made no attempt to enter. It appears to have been a salutation of friendship to their new

neighbors, but their departure was highly welcome. No second visit was paid but hardly a night passed that they could not be heard chasing deer, which were quite plentiful.

# **Chapter Three: [Pioneer Privations]**

My first winter of schooling at Vogel Center was taught by Miss Gezina Westveld. <sup>147</sup> She was seventeen years old and received three dollars per week and board. In the spring, when lumber camps broke up, the men would discard all worn or partially worn shirts and snow packs, etc., and we used to pick up such boots or packs as we thought we could use for a while yet. We also found some pieces of horse blankets which we used as boot fillers. I remember well one morning when I was thirteen years old and had a hole in one of my snow packs. My nearest fit was a number eight, but could find no mate of the same size, so I finally landed a number eleven. When I reached school, my teacher was almost in hysterics with laughter when she saw me coming with my odd-mated boots. But we thought nothing of it. As I said before, style had not yet entered Missaukee County, but I can assure you we were as happy as people are today.

In 1871, Missaukee County was dry. Not only Missaukee, but Michigan went dry. Holland (city) partly burned. All the wood and marshes were on fire. For three weeks or more, it was smoke, smoke, and some more smoke. We all had sore eyes, but there was nowhere to go to get away from it. The fire was creeping along, nearer and nearer, like a line of soldiers. As we had only small clearings fenced with brush, we knew if these fences ever got on fire the buildings would go. To protect them, we made wooden rakes and raked the burning leaves back to stop the fire. One evening, we worked until nine o'clock, when a rain shower came to our relief and put out the fire. It was so dark, we had to feel our way out of the woods for half a mile, but it was very welcome.

Time rolled on slowly. After a time, we got mail once a week, carried from Evart to Falmouth by W.W. Quigley. We had a small box nailed to a pine tree on the river road, a quarter mile east of the Herweyer Bridge. Mr. Quigley blew a tin horn if he had mail for us, and we made a bee line for the pine tree.

Oh, how welcome that horn sounded to us. Could we have thought that we would live to see the day we would get mail once a day? Now it was being hauled over tough, muddy roads with the mosquitoes so thick that Quigley had to carry a smudge in his buggy.

Gradually our clearing enlarged; potatoes [were] raised and sold to the lumbermen at one dollar a bushel. But as the ground was a mat of green roots, we had to dig them with a hoe. We did well to dig twelve or thirteen bushels a day.

More settlers came. Will mention only a few of the real pioneers so far settled:

John Vogel

Henry Jager

• John Jacht

John Abbing

Cornelius Quist

John Westdorp

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>147</sup> Probably Gezina Westveld, b. 1855 in Holland, Michigan to Rutgert Westveld and Dina Schepers Westveld, niece to homesteader Henry Westveld.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>148</sup> 8 October 1871 saw several simultaneous significant fires in Michigan, including Holland, where about half the town was burned.

- Tom Lutke
- Gerrit Vis
- John Vis
- D.J. Hamming
- Frank Vogel
- Ira Hoekwater
- John W. Hoekwater
- Henry Westveld
- Otto Herweyer
- Gerrit Herweyer
- C. Catts
- Ralph Veen
- John Meyering

- Peter DeZeeuw
- Ira Van Meter
- Henry Van Meter
- Jacob Lems
- Wm. Van Meter
- Robert Van Meter
- B. Van Wingerden
- Thomas Cavanaugh
- Adrian Copier
- Guy Copier
- Jacob Hamming
- Nick Hamming
- John Gillis Sr.

- John Gillis Jr.
- Alex McBain
- William McBain
- John Lutke
- Tom Lutke
- Jans Lutke
- Arie Leeman
- Gerrit Dieterman
- The writer, Leonard Herweyer
- My brother, Jacob Herweyer

By my personal memory, these are the real old pioneers of southeastern Missaukee County.

Does the reader believe that we old pioneers carry the idea that the present generation would not be able to withstand the same hardships we did? We do not. They could do it, but not until they were too poor that they would have to sing, "Root hog or die." Poverty makes you do most anything. It kills pride of every description. It makes you willing to economize in everything. If you can't afford coffee, roast peas or barley, as we did, to make the water look brown. If you can't afford sugar, do without it as we did. If you can't afford butter, put pork grease on your bread—if you can get pork grease. We were only too glad to get flour, pork and beans.

# **Chapter Four: [From Pioneers to County]**

So far I have told you a little of the hardships we went through, so [I] will give you a little of the sunshine in this part. After a week's hard work, we would gather at one of the three little shanties on Sunday. One Sunday at Vogels, next Sunday at Jagers, the third Sunday at our house, which later became the John W. Hoekwater homestead. Someone would read a sermon written by Rev. C.H. Spurgeon. We always had a full house.

Our place of meeting was in rooms only twelve by twenty, with one half-window, eight by ten glass, for light. After the sermon, we discussed the experiences of the past week, how the potatoes grew, what luck we had falling the big trees, and what the chance was of some settlers coming soon. Everybody was a welcome neighbor, and for years we knew everyone in the community.

Later [in 1871,] our township was organized and we began to make public improvements by cutting our roads. All jobs were bid in high. This began to be of some relief financially. Young men obtained work in the lumber camps. Things went more smoothly. Cattle increased. Steers were trained to do farm work.

My father made a wooden V harrow with teeth of two-inch elm set on a slant so it would jump over the roots and small stumps. Quite a machine for 1870. Messrs. Hoekwater and Vogel bought a wood frame harrow with spike teeth, but the frame would break and had to be replaced or mended. In time, we all

learned, more or less, to be carpenters by compulsion. Plowing had to be done with a shovel plow as the roots were so strong that a common plow could not be used for the first two or three years.

Then came another advance. Mr. Vogel bought an old whip saw, and he and a hired man sawed enough lumber for C. Quist to lay an upper and lower floor. Next a man named Perley put up the first saw mill in this country, at Falmouth. The engine and other machinery were poled up the Muskegon and Clam Rivers in two large scows. They had a team of oxen with them to pull the scows over the worst places. I do not remember the year this was done, but it must have been about 1874.

The pioneers were bent on farming, never realizing the fortune they let slip by. Had they put every dollar they had in pine timber, then selling for a song, all could have been independent. Only a few farsighted men like D.A. Blodgett, T.D. Stimson, Thos. Burns, etc. really saw what was to come. Those days we all carried the idea that Michigan would not be deleted of timber for generations to come. But we have lived to see much of it disappear.

"Finis"

# Northern Missaukee's First White Settlers (c1936)

By M.D. Richardson, Lansing Mich.,

[Marion D. Richardson is son of Washington Richardson, both of whom were among the first pioneers. Marion went on to be a community leader in Missaukee most of his life. He died 14 May 1937 in Lansing. His memoirs here seem to repeat portions of Stout's work, embellished with Richardson's own recollections. Exactly when and where this was published is unclear. <sup>149</sup>]

## **Early Homestead Claims**

The first homestead entry in Missaukee county was in Pioneer township in 1867. The first two being taken on section 14, the third on Section 34, the fourth by Washington Richardson, on Section 29. [Richardson's information on homesteading is not fully correct. See the footnotes.] <sup>150</sup>

The first entry in 1868 was taken by myself, Marion D Richardson, on Section 26, Pioneer township, the second by Wilson Jones, in Section 26, Pioneer;<sup>151</sup> the third by Wm. Reeder on Sec. 6, Reeder Township;<sup>152</sup> the fourth by James White, on Sec. 20, Caldwell;<sup>153</sup> and the fifth by Abe Stout on Section 20, Richland township.<sup>154</sup>

The first wedding was in Riverside township, and if I remember rightly, the parties were John Cavanaugh and Carrie Van Meter, and my father performed the ceremony.

The first white child to be born in Missaukee county was a daughter of John Vogel, who resided in Clam Union. <sup>155</sup> The second was my daughter born March 28, 1870.

The county was organized in the year 1871, and the first general election was held April 1, 1871. The following officers were elected:

- Sherriff, Gillis McBain
- County Clerk, A.B. Watson
- County Treasurer, Ira VanMeter

Page 122 of 136

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>149</sup> The copy of Richardson's article in the Hirzel Collection is merged with another series of articles published in the Missaukee *Republican*, Lake City, 27 Feb 1936. In the Hirzel Colection, Richardson appears to replace the first entry (Daniel Reeder's memoirs), and the rest are Mary Reeder's 1902 paper. Richardson's memoirs are likely not published in this series, so the attribution is unknown.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>150</sup> Richardson seems to have a source here, maybe Stout or Reeder, but his assertions contradict the US Tract Book records. Besides claims by lumber speculators, H. Alson Ferris was the first homesteader to file a claim, followed by Jan Vogel and six other claims by Dutchmen. Only then, Washington Richardson, at age 41, filed on 27 Nov 1867 in Pioneer. Then William Morey in December 1867. The following year, when W. Richardson returned with his family, Marion D. Richardson, at age 21, filed on 4 April 1868 in Pioneer. See Koster, Steven, "The Earliest Settlers of Missaukee County" for full details.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>151</sup> Wilson Jones doesn't appear to have made a claim.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>152</sup> Daniel Reeder filed on 18 May 1868, founding Lake City.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>153</sup> Both David White and James White filed claims on 1 Feb 1869 in Caldwell

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>154</sup> Abraham Stout filed on 13 Sep 1868 in Riverside, before the White family.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>155</sup> Agnes Vogel, born 20 Jun 1869.

- Prosecuting Attorney, L.H. Gage, of Traverse City, was appointed
- School Examiner, M.D. Richardson

The Board of Supervisors at their first meeting placed the salaries so low that VanMeter refused to serve and resigned, so Washington Reeder was appointed by the board.

There were five townships in Missaukee county at that time: Pioneer, Clam Union, Riverside, and Reeder townships. Reeder township was organized under Wexford county rule and comprised what is now the townships of Caldwell, Forest, W Branch, Enterprise, Lake, Reeder, Aetna, and Butterfield townships, the entire two center rows of townships.

The first supervisors were as follows: Wm. J Morey, Pioneer; John Vogel, Clam Union; Henry VanMeter, Riverside; James White, Caldwell; Daniel Reeder, Reeder township.

Dorcas Wilcox, who lived in what is now Forest township, came to my father's home on Sec. 29, Pioneer, on an errand, and on her way home, was lost and never found although parties searched for days. This incident happened in 1874 or '75.

The first horse brought into Missaukee county was owned by Daniel Reeder, at Lake City.

My wife, Sarah Richardson, <sup>156</sup> was the first white woman to walk across a bridge, built in July 1869 over the Manistee River, located in Bloomfield township, sec. 6. She also was the first white woman to travel the State Road to Haymarsh Creek. My brother Thomas and I had the contract to build part of that road.

Traverse City, fifty miles away, was the nearest trading post and Post Office.

The first mail route that benefitted settlers in the northern part of the county came from Fife Lake to Mr. Brainard's in West Branch Township. The mail was carried by Bob Clark.

My father, Washington Richardson, took up his homestead in November 1867, and moved to his new home in May 1868. 157

With the organization of the county in 1871, the county seat was temporarily located in Falmouth with the proviso that a vote be taken in 1873 to decide whether it remain there or be moved to Lake City, with the result that it was finally located in Lake City,

James White, mentioned as the fifth homesteader in 1868, locating his entry on Section 20, Caldwell township, was the father of Mrs. R.M. and Mrs. John Bielby, Lake City.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>156</sup> On 14 February, 1869, Marion D. Richardson, at age 22, having returned briefly to Jasper, Indiana, married Sarah Shirer (b 1848 in Ohio).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>157</sup> After filing his claim in 1867, W. Richardson appears to have returned to Jasper, Indiana to collect his family and goods before returning to reside on the claim in May 1868, which was the common practice for these first settlers.

# **Historical Society Learns About Settlers (1982)**

Memoirs of James Cavanaugh, The Waterfront, December 8, 1982, Page 3

[The storyteller, James Cavanaugh, Jr., was born about 1896, son of James Cavanaugh (b. Sep 1847 in Canada) and Emma Stout Canvanaugh (b. July 1860 in Indiana).]

Five score and 16 years ago, a forefather came forth to this county to settle. According to local resident and oral historian James Cavanaugh, that early settler was Paul Locks, the first white man in Missaukee County "except for surveyors." The year was 1866. John Vogel came in 1867 and left to return with is family the following year. That same year, 1868, Dan Reeder came to the county and built a 14 x 20 foot cabin on Muskrat Lake (now known at Lake Missaukee).

"That time was long ago and yet not so long ago," said Cavanaugh, speaking to the Missaukee County Historical Society at their annual potluck dinner held Thursday night to elect members and officers. "To give perspective, the Bill of Rights was consummated in 1788. Fourteen years later, my grandfather 160 was born in 1802, in Northern Ireland," Cavanaugh said. The Irishman immigrated to the London area of Canada where he married and fathered six boys and three girls.

"Five of those boys homesteaded in Missaukee County. James Cavanaugh was my dad and his brothers were Herbert, John, Daniel, and Thomas," <sup>161</sup> Cavanaugh added. A former storekeeper, Cavanaugh presented a brief history of his family's settlement in Missaukee County from his recollections and those of his father.

According to Cavanaugh, his father and uncles had worked in Michigan, Canada and Illinois, then returned to the peninsula state to work in the Saginaw-Bay City area in the lumber business. "They took the train as far west as it went--to Hershey--got off at Hershey, and started cruising land. At Riverside, they decided to settle," Cavanaugh explained. The year was 1869. James Cavanaugh settled kiddy-corner from what is now Riverside Cemetery. 162

The brothers walked to Traverse City, location of the land grant office, to file their claims. "On his walk, Dad saw Dan Reeder's place. His was the only settlement here (at Muskrat Lake). He said one of the most beautiful sights he saw was when he came to this (Lake Missaukee's) shore. He built a fire and all the mosquitos came to the fire," Cavanaugh joked.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>158</sup> There is no other record of such a person. And besides surveyors, there were lumbermen before homesteaders.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>159</sup> Vogel returned with several families in April 1868, and built cabins immediately. Washington Richardson also built cabins beginning May 1868.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>160</sup> Daniel Cavanagh, spouse Elizabeth Harrison.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>161</sup> William, John, James, Daniel, and Thomas all have records in Missaukee, but not Herbert.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>162</sup> James Cavanaugh filed a homestead claim on 16 June 1869 on 160 acres of NE sec. 22, 21N7W, Riverside., next to his brother William. Both received the deed 27 June 1874. John Cavanaugh filed on 12 Oct 1869 on E NE and NW NE of Sec 14, 21N7W. William, James, and John all appear in the 1870 census.

With the claims filed, it came time to clear land and build homes. Cooperation, Cavanaugh said, was the mode back then, with each brother helping the others to build the cabins.

"They were built (facing) true north and south because they used only a compass and very few tools: the saw and ax," Cavanaugh told the group of 22 present.

For income as well as sustenance, grain crops such as corn, wheat, oats, and barley were planted and cradled. Being a real good cradler was a source of pride to pioneer men, Cavanaugh added. After cradling, the cut grain was raked into rows, then bundled and tied, Cavanaugh said, explaining the hand-harvesting process. "And to thresh, they fladled."

The harvest was transported by ox team at first to Big Rapids and then to Clam Lake, (now Cadillac). They spent a night on the road and traded for what they needed to tide them over the winter: sugar, salt, salt, syrup," Cavanaugh said, adding that the pioneers salted their pork and jerked their beef.

Later, when sleighs came, winter lumbering added to the settlers' income. "They took the oxen to the lumber camps where they transported pine and hemlock by oxen to the Clam (River) where it floated to the Muskegon (River)," Cavanaugh said. "My dad, I'm told, was good with a team of oxen; his oxen always looked good." Cavanaugh explained his father's secret: "When he came in, he would wipe the snow off and wipe them down first. He'd have supper and then go back to the barn to give them a pinch of hay, a pinch of oats and a pail of water. If they fed them first and didn't wait, the oxen would be tired and winded and blow all over their grain and wouldn't eat it."

Cavanaugh said as a boy, he knew many of the Missaukee pioneers and "didn't talk much."

He listened to the likes of John and Henry Modders, the Quists, Van Meters, McBains, and Farrs who passed along oral histories. It was James McBain who told him their grandmothers were sisters. "'My Grandmother--Hite was the original name--had lived in Pennsylvania and southern Ohio. She smoked a clay pipe and always wore a black bonnet. McBain's grandmother wore a white bonnet. which left young Cavanaugh wondering why the two sisters never went without bonnets. "Millard McBain said they had been scalped by Indians: They were the only survivors of an Indian raid in Pennsylvania."

On a more humorous note. Cavanaugh spoke of the black-sheep in his family. "You know, if you go far enough into family history. you find one," Cavanaugh said to a reply of laughter. According to Cavanaugh, an "Uncle Abe" who was a cashier at the local bank ran away with another woman. "My aunt took him back. She was a Jew: if anybody was sick or needed something, she was there!"

To complement the austere, survivalist picture of the Missaukee settlers, Cavanaugh illustrated the aesthetic spirit of one particular pioneer. "Did you know Leish Farr? He liked plants. He walked 14 miles from Riverside to Lake City and carried a potted plant back!

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>163</sup> The <u>cradle scythe</u> has an additional arrangement of fingers attached to catch the cut grain so that it can be cleanly laid down in a row with the grain heads aligned for collection and efficient threshing.

"We can't go one mile to visit without a car. Then, they thought nothing of a four-, five-. ten-mile walk to visit," Cavanaugh added. "I have a great deal of pride in our ancestors, that they had the intestinal fortitude to stick it out--not everyone did."

The meeting concluded on a more current note, with the election of historical society officers. Hilda Whipple was elected president; James Prehn, vice-president; Jean Bronson, secretary; and Mary Adams, treasurer. Earlier, Madilyn Sundell and Bill Hage were re-elected to the board. William Baird was newly elected to the historical society board, replacing outgoing member Peter VanderPol.

# **Rutgert Brinks Family History (1934)**

#### Introduction

### **Background**

[The following history is taken from a 1934 family tree called "Rutgert Brinks Family History and Record of His Descendants, 1794-1934." It was prepared by the Brinks family roughly fifty years after their forbears immigrated from the Netherlands. Their story is typical for Dutch immigrants to America and Missaukee. It is also typical of family histories in that it gets the general narrative right but is often mistaken on the details, many of which are noted in the footnotes.] 164

#### **Preface from the book**

This book, written in 1934, contains a short biography of Rutgert Brinks and Jantje Hilbrandt and their four sons, Berend, Geert, Jan, and Harm; also a record of their descendants, compiled by Mrs. Henrietta Morgenstern, a great-grand-daughter, and the secretary of the Brinks Family Descendants Re-union, assisted by Mrs. Ralph G. Brinks, Mrs. Marvin Kooiker, Mrs. Arend Hopp, Mr. Ralph J. Brinks, and Mr. John H. Brinks.

It covers a period of 140 years, dating from 1794-1934 and records of six generations of 142 families and a total number of 683 descendants of which 80 have died. Of the descendants still living today, there are 28 grandchildren, 226 great-grandchildren, 319 great-great-grandchildren, and 26 great-great-grandchildren, making a total of 599 living descendants.

The oldest direct living member is Mrs. Grace Kole, nee Brinks, of Holland, Mich., who was 69 years, Aug. 3, 1934. Harm Derksen is the oldest by marriage, as he is the husband of Jane G. Brinks, and was 75 years, Feb. 28, 1934. Arden Dale Shuck of Dorr, Mich., born Aug. 27, 1934, is the youngest great-great-great-great-grandchild. There are 5 sets of twins who are direct descendants. They are: Mrs. Henrietta Morgenstern, Holland, Mich., and Mrs. Martin Kooiker, Hamilton, Mich., born Jan. 31, 1895; Miss Jean Bronkema, Grand Rapids, Mich., and Mrs. Harm Jager, Marion, Mich., born April 24, 1905; Elmer Brinks, South Holland, Ill., and Henrietta Brinks, Grand Rapids, Mich., born Dec. 15, 1916; Robert Earnest and Rosa Marv Vander Creek, Marion, Mich., born Feb. 2, 1925; and Rolene Ann and Carol Ann Hopp, Holland, Mich. There is one set of twins by marriage; they are Marvin and Alvin Bonzelaar, Holland, Mich., born Aug. 15, 1923.

Most of these descendants live in Michigan; others live in Washington, New Mexico, Arizona, Iowa, and Illinois.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>164</sup> A copy of the original book is housed in the Heritage Hall of Calvin College's Hekman Library, and several exist among family members. It was transcribed by Steven Koster in July 2016 from a personal copy.

## **Brinks Family History 1794-1934**

### **Rutgert Brinks (1794-1858)**

In the Netherlands, people were given surnames in accordance to their location, occupation, or farms on which they lived. The family name, "Brinks," originated from their location, as they lived near the brink of the village of Drouwen, Province Drenthe, Netherlands.

Rutgert Brinks was born in the Netherlands in 1794. He lost both of his parents when he was quite young; and so began working for others at the age of thirteen. Later he married Jantje Hilbrandt, hwho was born in the Netherlands in 1802. He had four children: Berend, Geert, Jan, and Harm. Rutgert Brinks had very little schooling, but was determined that his four children should be educated. He was a keeper of bees. He died in 1858 at the age of sixty-four years.

### Jantje Hilbrandt Brinks and three sons immigrate in 1867

Nine years later in 1867, Mrs. Rutgert Brinks and the three youngest sons, Geert, who married Margien Martens and their three children (Ralph, Annie, and John), and Jan and Harm, who were not married, left the Netherlands for America. They made the trip in nine and a half days. They settled near Black Lake, where the boys worked for Knoll and Vredeveld, making cord wood and peeling bark.

Soon after they bought a one hundred and forty-five acre farm around what was then known as Hopkins Dock and now would be located in the northwest part of Laketown township, county of Allegan, State of Michigan. Kalamazoo was the big city at that time and many of the young girls and boys went there to work to earn money, which they saved and later used to buy their farms.

### Son Berend Brinks immigrates in 1871

The oldest son, Berend Brinks, who was born Nov 3, 1825, in the Netherlands, married Hilgiena Ottens, who was born April 17, 1826, in the Netherlands. Eight children were born to them: Rutgert, Taal, Jennie, Gertie, Maggie, Hattie, Grace, and John. They lived in New Dordrecht, Province Drenthe, Netherlands. Their occupation was farming. This family came to America in 1871 when John, the youngest child was three years old.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>165</sup> Netherlands birth records suggest Rutgert Brinks' birthdate is actually 21 Jul 1798.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>166</sup> His Father Berend Harms Brinks was born in 1773 and died in 1806, when Rutgert was about 8 years old. But his mother Grietien Rutgers was born 09 Feb 1777 and lived to the age of 72, dying in 24 Jan 1850.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>167</sup> Rutgert and Jantje were married 07 May 1825 in Gasselte, Aa en Hunze, Drenthe, Netherlands, he age 27, she age 21.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>168</sup> Jantje was born 04 May 1804 in Buinerveen, Borger-Odoorn, Drenthe, Netherlands. Her parents were Geert Jans Hilbrands and Trientien Jans Vos.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>169</sup> Netherlands records suggest they had seven children, three of which died in childhood, including Geert #1 (age 7 months, b. 3 Jun 1828 – d. 16 Jan 1829), Geert #2 (age 1 month, b. 3 Jan 1830 – d. 21 Feb 1830), and daughter Grietien (age 4, b. 26 Aug 1835 – d. 12 Mar 1840). It was Dutch custom to name one's children after one's parents, and it was also custom that, when a child died, the next child of the same gender would take on the name. Three children with the same name is not unusual at a time of high infant mortality.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>170</sup> Netherlands records show Rutgert died 28 Jun 1862 in Vastenow, Emmen, Drenthe, Netherlands, at age 63.

It took them thirty-one days to make their trip. They left their home on April 28, 1871, and reached Holland, Mich. on May 29. They journeyed by wagon from their home at Dordrecht to Groningen where they boarded the train for Harlingen, Province Vriesland, Netherlands. From here on May 1st, on a Sunday morning, they crossed the North Sea and landed at Hull, England. A train took them from Hull to Liverpool, which they reached after midnight about 1:00 a.m. Here they waited until Thursday for the boat, "Pennsylvania," which sailed to America. They sailed for nineteen days on the Atlantic Ocean, landing in New York harbor on a Tuesday at 10:00 a.m. Small boats took them to Castle Garden, which was a stopping place for immigrants. Here they stayed for one and a half days to have their goods inspected, money exchanged, and to register. On Wednesday evening they boarded a train for Holland, Mich., passing through the following cities: New York, Albany, Buffalo, Clinton, <sup>171</sup> Detroit, Grand Rapids, Grand Haven, and reached Holland on May 29. They saw the Niagara Falls from the train windows.

In Holland, Mich. They soon found his mother and three brothers near Black Lake and remained with them two years. In 1873, Berend Brinks bought a forty-acre farm in Fillmore Township, County of Allegan, State of Michigan, which is four and a half miles south of Graafschap, later owned by his son, Rutgert J. Brinks, but which is now [in 1934] the property of a grandson, George R. Brinks.

Berend Brinks was an honest and industrious farmer and a loyal citizen of his adopted country. He and his wife were members of the Christian Reformed Church of East Saugatuck. Mrs. Berend Brinks, nee Hilgiena Ottens, died Oct 13, 1901, at the age of seventy-five years and six months, Berend Brinks survived his wife a little more than three years. he died December 10, 1904. He left seven children to mourn for him: Rutgert J., Taal, Gertie, Maggie, Hattie, Grace, and John, all of whom were married. Jennie or Mrs. Peter Brink, the oldest daughter, having died Dec 17, 1876, when her only son, Leonard P., was fourteen years old. This "L. P. Brink" became a missionary to the Indians in New Mexico in 1900. He is now [in 1934] located at Farmington, New Mexico.

#### The three sons sell their farms and move to Missaukee in 1882

In 1879, when Jan Brinks married Hendrikje Twenker and Harm Brinks married Zwaantje Beerends, the one hundred and forty-five acre farm was divided into three parts so each boy, that is Geert, Jan and Harm, had a farm. The mother lived with her son, Geert, until she died in 1875 at the age of seventythree years. 172

#### **Geert Brinks**

In the fall of 1882 Geert Brinks sold his farm and moved to Vogel Center, Mich., where he bought an eighty-acre farm. Geert Brinks and his wife, Margien Martens, had nine children: Ralph, Annie, John, Jane, Maggie, George, Helen, Susan, and Ben. 173 They worked hard on this new farm. They cut down the trees and without clearing the land they planted potatoes between the logs with a hoe, making a hole just big enough to put the potato in. For planting corn and oats, they cut the trees into logs, piled them

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>171</sup> Or Cleveland?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>172</sup> According to her death records, Jantien Hilbrandt Brinks died on 05 Jan 1875, in Laketown, Allegan, Michigan, at age 70y 7m 29d, of "old age."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>173</sup> They actually had 10 children: Roelof, Janna (infant), Janna, Jan Geerts, Jantien, Grietje, Geert, Helen, Zwaantje, Benjamin.

and then burned them. Next they fastened a yoke of oxen to a shovel plow and worked the soil among the stumps The seed was then planted. After Ralph G. Brinks, the oldest son, married Rica Van Der Mey, April 6, 1885, he lived with his folks and helped his father work the farm. 174

Geert Brinks and his wife were members of the Christian Reformed Church in Vogel Center, Mich. He served as elder a number of years. he died in Vogel Center, Mich., August 1, 1891, at the age of 58 years, leaving his wife and seven children to mourn for him: Ralph, Annie, John, Jane, Maggie, George, and Ben. A month and two days later, Sept. 3, 1891, George, one of his sons, died at the age of 16 years and about 2 months.

After Sept 18, 1895, when Mrs. Geert Brinks [Margien Martens] married Jan Van Der Mey, <sup>175</sup> the Geert Brinks farm was sold to Jasper Van Der Mey, a son of Jan, and then Ralph and his family went with his mother and Jan Van Der Mey to Jan Van Der Mey's farm. Mrs. Van Der Mey, nee Margien Martens, died Jan 11, 1907 at the age of 66 years and 8 months in Vogel Center, Michigan. Mr. Jan Van Der Mey survived his wife a little more than one year as he died Feb 13, 1908, at the age of 66 years and 18 days. Ralph G. Brinks then owned the Van Der Mey farm and stayed there until 1917 when his son George bought the farm. Then Ralph and Rica bought a house and lot in Vogel Center, Mich. Here they have a few cows and some chickens and work a little land beside. They are both members of the Christian Reformed Church at Vogel Center, Mich. Ralph G. Brink died Dec 29, 1934, leaving to mourn for him his wife Rica, one daughter, Mrs. Bert Jager [Johanna Brinks Jager], and four sons, George, John Wm., Joseph, and Herman Brinks.

#### Jan Brinks

Jan Brinks, the third son of Rutgert and Jantje Hilbrandt Brinks who was born Dec 2, 1839, in Drouwen, Netherlands, married Hendrikje Twenker, who was born in 1846 in Drenthe, Netherlands. They had four boys, Ralph, Dick, Jans, who died, and John. Jan Brinks sold his farm near Black Lake also in 1882 and went to Vogel Center, Mich. where he bought an eighty-acre farm. With the help of his two boys, Ralph and Dick, they soon cleared the land and made a living for themselves. Eighteen years later, Dec 30, 1900, Jan Brinks died at the age of 61 years, 1 month, and 29 days. he left to mourn for him his wife and three sons, Ralph, Dick, and John. Ralph and Dick were married so John, the youngest, stayed with his mother until she died in 1910 at the age of 64 years and 11 months. Mr. and Mrs. Jan Brinks were members of the Christian Reformed Church at Vogel Center, Mich.

#### Harm Brinks

Harm Brinks, the youngest and fourth son of Rutgert and Jantje Hilbrandt, was born in Drouwen, Netherlands, Jan. 27, 1852. In 1879 he married Zwaantje Beerens, who was born April 27, 1852 in Graafschap, Germany. Mr. and Mrs. Harm Brinks also sold their farm near Black Lake in 1882 and went to Vogel Center, Mich. where they bought a forty-acre farm and later another eighty acres. They were members of the Christian Reformed Church at Vogel Center, where Mr. Harm Brinks was an elder,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>174</sup> Roelof Geerts Brinks (b. 08 Apr 1861) married Dedrika A. VanderMey (b. 01 Jul 1866 to Jan Willem van der Meij and Johanna Hendrika Groenouwe) on 04 Apr 1885 in Vogel Center, Missaukee, Michigan, USA.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>175</sup> That means Roelof and Dedrika each had widowed parents, who then married each other. The in-laws became step-parents.

Sunday School and catechism teacher for a number of years. he also served on the school board and had charge of the road-work in the township in which he lived. Harm Brinks was killed accidentally when a tree fell on him as he was cutting it down, on June 13, 1896. Besides his wife, he left to mourn for him seven sons: Ralph, George, John, Henry, Ben, Herman, and Harry. John, another son, died before. Mrs. Harm Brinks and her sons kept on farming until she married Mr. Helms a few years later. They then moved to Grand Rapids, Mich. Mrs. Zwaantje Beerens Brinks Helms died on Dec 18, 1928. Mr. Helms died in Grand Rapids [07 Jan 1929].

### **Record of Descendants**

[The rest of the booklet is a family tree.]

-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>176</sup> Zwaantje Beerens and Henry Helms were married 12 Oct 1900.

# **Bibliography on Missaukee History**

Some known resources on the early history of Missaukee county, sorted by date published, with derivative works noted.

## On Native American History (pre-1800)

"Pre-Historic Mounds," Grand Rapids Democrat, 3 August 1883. Newspaper story of how Surveyor Coffinberry and Dan Reeder team up to excavate mounds on the "west side of their lake." They excavated two mounds, finding some bones and pottery sherds, noting others had already dug in one of the mounds.

Hinsdale, W. B., *Primitive Man in Michigan*, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, 1925. A survey of studies and artifacts of prehistoric people in Michigan, including Greenman's Missaukee work. 194 pages. https://catalog.hathitrust.org/Record/000600893

Kidder, A. V., "Archaeological Work by State Agencies in 1925," *American Anthropologist, New Series*, Vol. 28, No. 4 (Oct-Dec) 1926, pp. 679-694. A summary of early findings in Missaukee excavations.

Greenman, Emerson F., "Michigan Mounds, with Special Reference to Two in Missaukee County," Papers of the Michigan Academy of Science, Arts, and Letters, vol. VII, 1927, p. 1. A three-page report on excavations on native American mounds in Missaukee.

http://www.michigan.gov/documents/deq/GIMDL-MASALV24\_302501\_7.pdf

**Hinsdale, Wilbert B.,** *Archeological Atlas of Michigan*, **University of Michigan Press, 1931.** An overview of archeological features throughout the state, including a few pages on Missaukee summarizing Greenman's work. Includes maps.

**Greenman, Emerson F.,** *The Indians of Michigan,* **Michigan Historical Committee, 1961.** A booklet that appeared originally in the 1961 issue of *Michigan History*. It examines Native prehistory, the various major tribes encountered by Europeans in Michigan, their interactions with European powers, and a summary of "what happened to the Indians."

**Fitting, James E.,** *The Archeology of Michigan***, Natural History Press, Garden City, New York, 1970.** A good summary of Michigan prehistory, from the glaciers that formed the landscapes to the Native peoples, the artifacts they left behind, and how their periods of occupation have been named and dated by scholars. Includes appendix of radiocarbon dating of many artifacts.

**Baird, William.** *The Missaukee Mounds*, Missaukee Historical Society, Lake City, MI, 1976. A report prepared for the American bicentennial by the Missaukee County Bicentennial Committee. The author summarizes publications and correspondence, primarily from Emerson Greenman, on the Native American earthworks studied in Aetna township (call number: M 970.474 B164m).

Mann, Charles C., "1491" *The Atlantic*, March 2002. A general piece about new understandings of Native American populations and civilizations before Europeans, in part suggesting Medieval America

was every bit as sophisticated as Medieval Europe. http://www.theatlantic.com/magazine/archive/2002/03/1491/302445/

Howey, Meghan C. L. and John M. O'Shea, "Bear's Journey and the Study of Ritual in Archaeology" *American Antiquity*, Vol. 71, No. 2 (Apr., 2006), pp. 261-282. This paper addresses the development and antiquity of the Midewiwin ritual, a ceremony that is known historically throughout the Great Lakes region. The serendipitous discovery of a linkage between the Mide origin tale of "Bear's Journey" and the layout of the Late Prehistoric earthwork enclosures of northern Michigan provides an opportunity to document how a ritual system is represented in the archaeological record.

- Mason, Ronald J., "Some Comments on Bear's Journey and the Study of Ritual in Archaeology"
   American Antiquity, Vol. 74, No. 1 (Jan., 2009), pp. 189-192. Criticisms of "Bear's Journey."
- Howey, Meghan C. L. and John M. O'Shea, "On Archeology and the Study of Ritual:
   Considering Inadequacies in the Culture-History Approach and Quests for Internal 'Meaning,"
   American Antiquity, Vol. 74, No. 1 ((Jan., 2009), pp. 189-192. A response to critiques on "Bear's Journey."

Howey, Meghan C. L., Mound Builders and Monument Makers of the Northern Great Lakes, 1200-1600, University of Oklahoma Press, 2012. A book length treatment of Howey's explorations of northern Michigan ancient earthworks, including those in Aetna township.

#### **On James Pontiac**

**Kimball, Kendrick, "Heir to All the Area but He Can't Collect," Detroit News, 13 Jun 1948.** Sketch of James Pontiac, Missaukee resident and Great-Grandson of Chief Pontiac.

"Jim Pontiac Featured in Sunday Magazine" [presumably the Waterfront, following 13 Jun 1948.]

"Plaque Hung" [presumably the *Waterfront*] 22 Dec 1976. Plaque featuring James Pontiac hung by Bicentennial Committee at the courthouse to honor Native Americans of Missaukee.

See also Baird.

## On Early Surveyors (mid-1800s)

"Big Foot's Lovely Lake," Chicago Tribune, 27 Sep 1891. An interview and memoir from the first surveyor of Missaukee (and large parts of Michigan, Illinois, Wisconsin, and Iowa). Tales of surveying rough landscapes plus naming Lake Geneva, encountering Indians, and fighting bear.

"John Brink, An Old Government Surveyor," The Milwaukee Sentinel, January 29, 1899. An interview and memoir from the first surveyor of Missaukee, repeating some elements from the 1891 Tribune story.

### **General Material on Missaukee and Michigan**

Jenks, William L., "History and Meaning of County Names of Michigan," Historical Collections,
Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, Vol 38, 439-478, 1910. Drawing from over a dozen even older sources, Jenks explores the origins of names in Michigan. Regarding Missaukee, he says only "Missaukee

County was named for an Ottawa chief, who signed the treaties of 1831 and 1833. The meaning of the word is somewhat uncertain. Verwyst saying that it is a corruption of Missisaging, meaning at large mouth of river. Another derivation is from Mississauga, and Indian tribe at one time living at the northern end of Georgian Bay, the word meaning people of wide mouth river (467)." Available online at https://archive.org/details/historicalcollec38mich

**Netherlanders in America**, **Baker**, **Grand Rapids**, **translation 1985**, **original 1928**. English translation of a 1928 Dutch work on Dutch immigration to the New World, J. Van Hinte's *Nederlanders in Amerika*, *Een Studie over Landverhuizers in de 19e en 20ste Eeuw in de Vereenigde Staten van Amerika*, 2 vols. (Groningen, 1928)

**Lucas, H.S.,** *Netherlanders in America***, University of Michigan Press, 1955.** A compilation of primary sources and a general history of Dutch immigration written in English by an American.

### Specific Material on Missaukee Early Settlers (late-1800s)

**Stout, George S.,** *The Story of a Year in Missaukee County*, Lake City, Michigan, **1891.** A booklet published by Stout's newspaper in 1892, reviewing the previous year's events. It presents a dated list of events throughout 1891, followed by narrative descriptions of Missaukee.

- It was republished serially in the Missaukee Republican from 6 Jan 1944 to 2 March 1944.
- Some elements are preserved in the Hirzel Collection and Bea Patterson's Journal.

**Reeder, Daniel, memoirs,** *Plain Dealer, May 19, 1897.* Ghost written memoirs from Daniel Reeder regarding his exploration and homesteading in Missaukee.

They were republished and combined with his daughter Agnes' childhood memories as the first
installment of "Some Facts of Missaukee County in The Early Days," Missaukee Republican, Lake
City, Mich., February 20, 1936. (The other installments were largely Mary Reeder's 1902 paper.)

**Reeder, Mary, unpublished paper, 1902.** Mrs. Mary Reeder prepared and read a paper sketching several "firsts" in Missaukee history for the old settlers' reunion in 1902. It seems to draw from Stout's *Story of a Year.* It has been frequently quoted as history by other summaries, including

- Powers, Perry F., A History of Northern Michigan and its People, 3 volumes, 1912,
- "Some Facts of Missaukee County in The Early Days," *Missaukee Republican*, Lake City, Michigan, 20 February 1936.
- "Missaukee County," January 1946
- "Missaukee County Settlers," Families of Missaukee, The Waterfront, Lake City, circa 1980. A
  historical summary in a booklet of family memories.

**Vogel, Jan, Memoir of John Vogel, Immigrant and Pioneer, circa 1906**. Taken from his own journals and memories, Vogel's memoir recounts his entire life up to a year before he died in 1907. His autobiography was translated from Dutch to English by B.G. Oosterbaan in 1937.

The original Dutch language manuscripts are in the Calvin College archives.

- A shortened and significantly edited version was produced by H.S. Lucas and published in Michigan History magazine, Michigan Historical Commission, Lansing, Michigan, Vol. 30 No. 3, July-September, 1946.
- The shortened and edited version also appears in Lucas, H.S., Netherlanders in America.
- [Some version was reprinted in the newspaper too]
- Fred C. Hirzel obtained a full version of the Oosterbaan translation, lacking Lucas' edits, from the Vogel family, including it in the Hirzel Collection.

**Stout, George S.,** *The History of Missaukee County*, **Lake City., Michigan. 1917**. Newspaper man and local historian G. Stout recounts the earliest political, economic, and social events in Missaukee, likely drawn from official records, newspaper accounts, and family memories.

- Stout used his own 1891 Story of a Year as a starting point.
- Fred C. Hirzel edited Stout's history in 1964, adding annotations and commentary from his own knowledge.

**Herweyer, Leonard, "Pioneer Days in Clam Union Township," circa 1935.** Original publication status unknown. Published over four weeks in the *Waterfront,* beginning 16 September 1981. Childhood memories of pioneering in Missaukee. It begins with immigration from the Netherlands, and includes the choice to pioneer in Missaukee, along with tales of early life in the woods. It is a complement to Jan Vogel's more extensive memoirs.

Richardson, M.D, "Northern Missaukee's First White Settlers," circa 1936. Clippings of Marion Richardson's memoirs do not indicate precisely in which paper or year they were published, but presumably before his death in 1937. He borrows most material from Stout, but adds a few tidbits of his own memory that are valuable.

**Reeder, Martin D., "Early Lake City," unpublished manuscript, circa 1950.** Memoirs of Martin D Reeder from notes he compiled before his death in 1953.

**Catts, Rene, "Missaukee Native Tells of Old Days When County Was Settled," 1965.** Catts uses Vogel and Herweyer liberally as sources, and then continues with a few additional facts and personal memories of growing up among the pioneers.

- Appeared in Cadillac Evening News, Cadillac, MI, on July 26, 1965, and
- The Waterfront, Lake City, MI, in a weekly series published April 1, 1987-May 6, 1987.

**DeRuiter, Josephine, "The Story of the Dutch," unpublished paper, Calvin College, 1968.** An academic paper on the Dutch immigration to Missaukee county.

Kerzich, Mary Ann, "Historical Society Learns About Settlers [from James Cavanaugh]," Waterfront, 8 December 1982. James Cavanaugh recalls his childhood among the Missaukee pioneers.

This reader was compiled by

Rev. Steven Koster 17607 71<sup>st</sup> Ct Tinley Park, IL 60477

steven@koster.com www.koster.com

Comments and suggested additions are welcome.

Other resources include:

https://www.facebook.com/groups/missaukeehistorians/

https://www.facebook.com/MissaukeeCountyHistoricalSociety/

http://www.missaukeelibrary.org/

https://www.facebook.com/missaukeedistrictlibrary/

First Edition © 2013 Steven Koster Second Edition © 2016 Steven Koster